

## **Moses Upchurch and his Family UAFA Enrolled Family AFEF No. 3**

### **I. Introduction**

This compendium for the descendants of Moses Upchurch is being created, maintained, and updated by the Upchurch and Allied Families Association and cooperators with the purpose of having at one online site details about this UAFA “enrolled” family. Today, thousands can trace their heritage back to Moses Upchurch.

Each UAFA enrolled family is served by a coordinator. Initially, the default coordinator of all enrolled families is Phil Upchurch, the founder of UAFA. Financial support is required to enroll and augment records for an enrolled family and to keep it online for the long term. The financial co-sponsors of the Moses Upchurch family and active supporters will be reported in periodic e-newsletters to the Moses Upchurch family. The goal is to have a minimal endowment of \$10,000 for this family, the earnings of which will support the records of this family and UAFA.

Historically, the records for the Moses Upchurch family have been found in a great many places. By “enrolling” this family under the auspices of UAFA, the intent is to have a central portal which will readily allow a member of this family to see and understand reference materials about their heritage. Much of this material exists in the Allied Family Archives amassed by Phil Upchurch over a forty-year period. This and other resources will set the stage for further research, or for the creation of a comprehensive family history. Progress will depend on collaboration.

Readers are aware of the large amount of conflicting data for any given family on Ancestry.com and other sites. It is difficult and essentially impossible to get these conflicts resolved online. Furthermore, some of these sites fade from view over time. The plan and intent of UAFA is to resolve both of those issues. It is our intent that content portrayed by UAFA for an enrolled family will be factual and subject to ongoing validation and that the content will remain online for the long term under the auspices of UAFA. To make this a reality, UAFA must be sustained by an active volunteer Board of Directors, volunteer cooperators must be active participants, and some hired help must be available. Tax-deductible financial contributions will be important to allow all of this to happen. You may go to the [Home Page](#) of this website to find a membership/contribution form.

## **II. An Overview of Moses Upchurch and his Family**

### **A. A Brief Review of the Life of Moses Upchurch**

According to the best records available, Moses Upchurch was born in Brunswick County, VA in 1753. He moved with his father, Richard Upchurch II, to Granville Co., NC, where Richard II appeared on the tax rolls in 1755. The family settled in the Moccasin Creek area on what was to become the approximate boundary between Franklin and Wake Counties. Moses' father Richard II was born about 1725 and died in 1798. His grandfather James Upchurch was born in Virginia and died there in 1765. His great grandfather Richard Upchurch was born about 1658 and died before 1700. His great-great grandfather, Michael Upchurch (1624-1681), was the original American Upchurch immigrant who came to America about 1638.

Moses Upchurch married Mary Simms (1757-1847) in 1772. He served in the Revolutionary War, as did his brothers Charles and Nathan. Other brothers were Richard III, Benjamin, James, Moses, and Abel. His sisters were Frances, Betty, and Nancy. About 1800, Nathan and Moses moved west to the boundary of Chatham and Wake Counties in North Carolina. Charles moved to Georgia; Richard III and Benjamin remained on the Wake/Franklin border near their birth place.

Moses was very active in purchasing and developing farm land on both sides of the Wake/Chatham border. He raised a large family, some of whom remained in the home community. He lived to be about 100 years of age and is buried in Chatham County in an unmarked grave on one of the parcels of land he purchased when he first moved to Chatham.

Moses is of the fifth generation of Upchurches in America. He is considered a patriarch and head of the Moses Upchurch Clan.

### **B. Presentation of Moses Upchurch, his Children, and Grandchildren**

Moses Upchurch married Mary Simms (1757-1847) in 1772 and they had 11 children:

1. Letha Upchurch (ca. 1773, Franklin Co., NC- 1837, NC) married Hezekiah Massey (b. 1780-)
2. Parthenia Upchurch (ca. 1788, Franklin Co., NC -?) married William Smith. They had one child:
  - a. Upchurch Smith (ca. 1803, Wake Co., NC-1899)
3. Gillium Upchurch (1782, Franklin Co., NC – 1854, Wake Co., NC) married Sarah Smith (ca. 1792-ca. 1855). They had ten children:
  - a. Hanson Upchurch (1814, NC – 1890)
  - b. Sidney Upchurch (ca. 1816, Chatham Co., NC- ca. 1865)

- c. Unknown female (1820 – 1825)
- d. Unknown female (1820 – 1825)
- e. Joseph Upchurch (ca. 1827-?)
- f. Mary E. Upchurch (ca. 1830 -?)
- g. Carolina Upchurch (ca. 1833 -?)
- h. Charles Upchurch (ca. 1836 -?)
- i. Harriet Upchurch
- j. Elizabeth Upchurch

4. Mary Upchurch (1785, Franklin Co., NC – 1866) married Odam Bunn

5. Ruffin Upchurch (1787, Franklin Co., NC-1866, Wake Co., NC)

Married first possibly Mary Barbee, possibly had one child, Henderson Upchurch (1812-1892)

Married second Elizabeth Kelly (aka O'Kelly) (1791-ca. 1818/23)

Married third Martha (aka Margaret) Goodwin (d. ca. 1879)

- a. Clement Upchurch (?), (1805-1810)
- b. Martha Upchurch (?), (b. ca. 1815)
- c. Unknown female (b. ca. 1816)
- d. Mary "Polly" Upchurch (?) (b. ca. 1817)
- e. Sarah "Sally" Upchurch (b. ca. 1819)
- f. Kelly Franklin Upchurch (1816-ca. 1890)
- g. Elizabeth Upchurch (b. ca. 1822- )
- h. Mariah Upchurch (b. 1828)
- i. John R. Upchurch (1826-1894)
- j. Rufus "Zeke" Upchurch (ca. 1831-1882)
- k. Orlando Jackson Upchurch (1833-1906)
- l. Thomas "Tom" Upchurch (ca. 1834-1863)
- m. Catherine Upchurch (ca. 1838- ?)
- n. James Wesley Upchurch (ca. 1839- ?)
- o. Augusta Ann Upchurch (1842-1916)
- p. Cara Margaret Upchurch (ca. 1844-1928)
- q. Anna Upchurch (ca. 1845-before 1866)
- r. Benjamin Franklin Upchurch (1847- ?)
- s. Abby Upchurch (ca. 1851- ?)
- t. Eliza Jane Upchurch (ca. 1853- ?)

6. Whitney Upchurch (1793, Franklin Co., NC-1863, Wake Co., NC) married Elizabeth Goodwin (1794, Wake Co., NC-ca. 1860, Wake Co., NC)

- a. Unknown female (b. ca. 1810/15 - ?)
- b. Nancy A. Upchurch (ca. 1817-1888)
- c. Candis Upchurch (1818-ca. 1889)
- d. Richard Dillard Upchurch (1820-1906)
- e. Duncan Lemuel Upchurch (1824-after 1900)
- f. Hesper Ann Upchurch (1828- ?)

- g. James M. Upchurch (1830-after 1880)
- h. Martha Jane Upchurch (1832-after 1910)

7. Courtney Upchurch (ca. 1794, Franklin Co., NC- before 1840, Marengo Co., AL) married Cynthia Richardson (ca. 1795-ca. 1875).

- a. Unknown female (ca. 1815)
- b. Sarah Upchurch (b. ca. 1817/20)
- c. Unknown male (b. ca. 1820)
- d. Unknown female (b. ca. 1821)
- e. Unknown female (b. ca. 1822)
- f. Moses Upchurch (ca. 1822-after 1880)
- g. Unknown male (ca. 1824)
- h. Unknown male (b. ca. 1825)
- i. Lawrence Upchurch (ca. 1826-1866)
- j. Calvin Burnett Upchurch (ca. 1827-after 1880)
- k. Unknown male (b. ca. 1829)
- l. Sion Upchurch (b. ca. 1829/32)
- m. Delinea Upchurch (ca. 1829/32-before 1880)
- n. Cynthia Upchurch (1835-ca. 1871)
- o. James Courtney (ca. 1839-1874)

8. Calorgy Upchurch (1795, Franklin Co., NC – after 1870). Never married.

9. Murray Upchurch (1797, Franklin Co., NC- 1872, Chatham Co., NC)

Married first Nancy Baucom Scott (1801-1864) They had ten children.

Married second Nancy E. Dodd Carson (ca. 1823-1869) no issue

Married third Sallie Temples (1812-1880) no issue

- a. Martha Upchurch (1821- ?)
- b. Elizabeth Upchurch (1823- ?)
- c. Isham Sims (1824-1916)
- d. John Upchurch (1826 -?)
- e. Emily Catherine Upchurch (1828-1924)
- f. Paschal B. Upchurch (1830-1863)
- g. Farrington Upchurch (1832-before 1850)
- h. Rachel Rebecca Upchurch (1835-1879)
- i. Mary Ann Upchurch (1837-1885)
- j. Clary (Clara) Upchurch (1843-1917)

10. Clegg Upchurch (1800, Chatham Co., NC – before 1810, Chatham Co., NC)

11. Sims Upchurch (1808, Chatham Co., NC-1880 Chatham Co., NC)

Married first Abigail Olive (1810-1847, Chatham Co., NC). They had ten children.

Married second Matilda Temples (1808, NC - ?)

Married third Tabitha Williams (1810 – 1880 Chatham Co., NC)



- a. Parthenia Upchurch (1833-1905)
- b. Quinetta Upchurch (1834-1908)
- c. Lucetta Upchurch (1834-1907)
- d. Lewraney (Luraney) Upchurch (1836-1876)
- e. James Henderson Upchurch (ca. 1838-1864)
- f. Williford Upchurch (ca. 1841-missing in action 1861-1865)
- g. Winslow Upchurch (1808-1880)
- h. Winship Upchurch (1844-missing in action 1861-1865)
- i. Courtney Upchurch II (1846-1920)
- j. Alvania Upchurch (1848-1923)

### **III. Supplementary Resources Providing Information Pertinent to the Family of Moses Upchurch**

#### **A. Concept**

For any given historic family, details may be found in many places. In recent years, overall compilations of various kinds have increasingly been made available online. The concept of accessioning these entities to help assemble the records for a given family involves a special approach created by the Allied Families Association. Techniques to capture content of a given entity are unique for each given enrolled family. In some cases, Allied Families has created its own collections to be accessed in support of enrolled families. Such is the case for images and excerpts.

#### **B. A Listing of Resources that Provide Useful Information for the Moses Upchurch Family**

##### **1. Cemeteries – General**

UAFA will access and annotate selected cemetery records in support of the Moses Upchurch Family. The individuals buried in a given cemetery may be selectively listed or all burials may be listed. To the extent possible, records from Find-A-Grave will be used and credit will be given. UAFA will add supplementary notes to burial listings to make them more meaningful for a given burial. The following cemetery has been treated in support of the Moses Upchurch Family:

- a. Green Level Baptist Church Cemetery, Cary, NC - **X (see attachment 2)**

##### **2. Books – primarily family history books – X (see attachment 3)**

##### **3. Images/Videos – including pictures supplied by family members – X (see attachment 4)**

##### **4. Documents – including wills, deeds, pension applications, etc. – X**

##### **5. Maps – showing relevant enclaves and migration patterns – X**

6. Excerpts – brief extracts of items of special interest to the family – **X** (see **attachment 5**)

The resources to be in the database applicable to the Moses Upchurch Family are indicated by X's above. As resources are created, the X's will be replaced by specific items in the database. For example, if there were three images that were relevant, they would be listed as AFDB-3, AFDB-22, and AFDB-31 (AFDB=a prefix derived from Allied Families Database). The numbers are currently imaginary, selected for illustrative purposes.

## Appendix 1: Status of Financial Support for the UAFA Enrolled Family of Moses Upchurch (ca. 1753 – ca.1853)<sup>1</sup>

I. Co-sponsors of the Moses Upchurch Family – The following individuals are ongoing co-sponsors of the Moses Upchurch Family Project, having contributed a minimum of \$50 in support:

Co-Sponsor	Residence	Sub Clan	Line
1. Alan & Nancy McGee	NC	Whitney	Bennett
2. Sharon Self	MS	Courtney	Moses

### II. Support Targets

A. Initial \$200 – Allows the family to be “enrolled” on a minimum level by having a narrative placed on the UAFA website. This target has been met.

B. Secondary Target of \$500 – Allows the creation of a periodic e-newsletter designed to keep members of this enrolled family informed as to progress in documenting the family and to seek more input. The e-newsletters will be maintained online indefinitely. As of July 10, 2015, a total of \$250 has been contributed to reach the target of \$500.

C. The Endowment Target – The goal is to reach several benchmarks leading to a fully invested minimum permanent fund of \$10,000, the income of which will be used equally to support the documentation of the Moses Upchurch Family and the operation of UAFA.

Benchmark One – Contributions up to \$2,500 (beyond the initial and secondary targets) will be collected and placed in a reserve non-interest bearing account.

Benchmark Two – An additional \$2,500 will be collected bringing the long-term support fund to \$5,000. Between the \$2,500 and \$5,000 levels, the funds will be placed in an interest bearing account. If the UAFA treasury is healthy, it will match funds to move from \$2,500 to \$5,000. Upon reaching \$5,000, the assets will be invested in a balanced index Schwab account with funds supporting other families, with each family fund accounted for separately.

Benchmark Three – When the long term support fund reaches \$10,000, then and only then will proceeds from the fund be used for support purposes. The tentative policy is that five percent of the value of the fund as of December 31 each year will be available for support purposes.

### III. Opportunities for Supporting the Moses Upchurch Family

A. Individuals are invited to volunteer their time for various projects.

B. Contributions of family history materials are sought. Included could be books, manuscripts, collections, or physical objects.

C. Financial contributions are invited and are tax-deductible to the extent allowed by law (UAFA is a 501(c)3 IRS approved tax-exempt organization).

D. UAFA invites supporters to consider established a charitable remainder unitrust or lead charitable trust to support the Moses Upchurch Family or to list UAFA in their estate plan. Inquire for details.

---

<sup>1</sup>Notes:

A. For more information or for following up with UAFA headquarters, go to the UAFA website [www.alliedfamilies.com](http://www.alliedfamilies.com), where contact information may be found as will a portal for contributions by PayPal.

B. In addition to becoming a co-sponsor of the Moses Upchurch Family, individuals are urged to become a member of UAFA.

C. The content of this Appendix has been approved by the UAFA Board of Directors and is subject to change by the Board.

**Biofiles of the Moses Upchurch Enrolled Family Currently Available on the [Allied Families](http://www.alliedfamilies.com) Website**

- |                           |                             |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| • Goodwin, Elizabeth      | • Upchurch, Henderson (TX)  |
| • Lassiter, Rachael       | • Upchurch, Hesper Ann      |
| • Massey, Hezekiah        | • Upchurch, James Monroe    |
| • Rogers, Joseph          | • Upchurch, Leatha          |
| • Sims, Mary              | • Upchurch, Martha Jane     |
| • Smith, Sarah            | • Upchurch, Mary            |
| • Smith, Upchurch         | • Upchurch, Mary S.         |
| • Smith, William          | • Upchurch, Moses S.        |
| • Upchurch, Ada(h)        | • Upchurch, Murray          |
| • Upchurch, Bennett A.    | • Upchurch, Nancy XID 55845 |
| • Upchurch, Calorgy       | • Upchurch, Parthenia       |
| • Upchurch, Candis        | • Upchurch, Rachel          |
| • Upchurch, Claudia Ann   | • Upchurch, Richard Dillard |
| • Upchurch, Clegg         | • Upchurch, Ruffin          |
| • Upchurch, Courtney      | • Upchurch, Sims            |
| • Upchurch, Duncan Lemuel | • Upchurch, Whitney         |
| • Upchurch, Gillum        | • Upchurch, William Green   |

UB VOL 1, NO 1, P 13

JAN 1980

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

## CLAN 1 ( MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID

Moses Upchurch was born in Brunswick Co., VA in 1753 and at age 2 moved with his father to the Moccasin Creek area of NC which is on the boundry of Wake and Chatham Counties. He served in the Revolutionary War and a few years thereafter moved with his brother Nathan to the boundry of Wake and Chatham Counties where he lived to be about 100 years old. Moses' children were:

Letha	XID 3	Whitney	XID 11
Parthenia	5	Calorgy	13
Gillium	6	Murray	14
Mary	7	Clegg	16
Ruffin	9	Sims	17
		Courtney	1109

Belle West has given special attention to Moses U. in her book UPCHURCH FAMILY including a rather complete listing of the descendants of Murray U. Much new material has now been assembled on the other children of Moses.

UB VOL 1, NO 2, P 53

APR 1980

## CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID

Moses U. had a son Ruffin U. who is said to have had 22 children. Several descendants of Ruffin U. have expressed a keen interest in helping to assemble the details of their subclan. Among them are Ala (Wilson) Yow of Raleigh, NC; Waylon Clive U. of El Paso, TX; and Ouida Catherine U. Ouida is a retired Navy Captain who lives in Washington, DC. She became a Navy Captain back when such ranks were quite rare for women. Bonnie Lounette Watkins has been most helpful with the Whitney U. subclan.

UB VOL 1, NO 4, P 131

OCT 1980

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID

1

MARK WESLEY UPCHURCH FAMILY REUNION (Note: Mark Wesley Upchurch was the son of Moses U. and the (gs) of Courtney U. and the (ggs) of Moses U., the Head of Upchurch Clan No. 1. - Editor). The third annual Mark Wesley Upchurch Family Reunion met Saturday afternoon June 21, 1980 at the Leroy Percy State Park at Hollandale, Mississippi. Mark Wesley Upchurch, the son of Moses Upchurch and grandson of Courtney Upchurch was born 1 SEP 1851 in Alabama. Between 1852-1856 his family moved to Mississippi, where he died 21 NOV 1901. He was married three times: Betsy "Bettie" Ann Longford, Martha A. McKay, and Joseph Martha Edmonia Hughes. There are a total of 10 children known from the first and third marriages, two of whom died before reaching adulthood. Mrs. Herbert Wayne Upchurch, Sr., of Greenville, MS was in charge of this year's reunion. Eighty-five descendants attended, representing six of Mark Wesley's children. Before adjourning, June 20, 1981 (third Saturday in June) was chosen for next year's reunion. It was decided that the meeting place would remain at Leroy Percy State Park. From Genevieve Ellen (Tharp) Little.

4345

1111,1109

1

4345,1111

1109

5115,5116

5117

INTRODUCTION AND OUTLINE OF THE WHITNEY UPCHURCH SUBCLAN OF  
THE MOSES UPCHURCH CLAN

Whitney Upchurch was one of eleven children of Moses U. XID  
11,1  
Whitney was born in the Moccasin Creek area of Franklin County, NC in 1793. When he was about ten years old he moved with his parents to the eastern section of Chatham Co., NC near the present-day Green Level Community which is in Wake Co. His uncle, Nathan U. 78  
made a similar move but took up residence just inside Wake Co. Whitney must have had a wonderful time growing up under more-or-less frontier conditions along with his brothers and sisters and cousins.

As a young man, Whitney U. bought land in the community where 11  
he was raised but on the Wake County side. He lived out his life in this section with all references to him being in the Wake County records. He was married at age 18 in Wake Co., NC to Elizabeth Goodwin, age 16 12  
(bond date 3 JAN 1811). The bondsman was his brother, Courtney U. 1109  
Elizabeth was born about 1795 in Wake Co., NC. Whitney was on the tax rolls in Wake Co. in 1820. He appeared on the Wake Co. Census in 1830, 1840, 1850 and 1860, presumably at the same site. He died in 1863 at age 70. No will has been found.

In 1860 Whitney U. owned 70 acres of improved land and 310 acres 11  
of unimproved land. There is no record that he owned slaves although his neighbors and relatives did. In the 1840 Census the Whitney U. home is shown as only two doors away from his first cousin, Gilbert U. 82  
(your Editor's greatgrandfather). With diligent search it should be possible to locate these sites.

There exists in the hands of Mrs. Hollie O. Kelly (nee Adelia Jane U.) and old country store ledger book for the period April 1827 638  
to October 1829. In this book Whitney U. is shown as making purchases on 12 APR 1827, JUN 1827, and SEP 1827.

The Whitney U. Subclan contains an interesting family record written by one of his grandsons, Thomas Benton U., Sr. and entitled 2828  
"The Story Of My Life". In this book he reveals that his father was Bennet A. Upchurch. 2719

The brothers and sisters of Whitney U. were also heads of subclans in the Moses U. Clan. They were (including Whitney):

	XID		XID
Letha U., b. ca 1773.	3	Courtney U., b. ca 1794,	1109
Gillium U., b. 1782,	6	d. ca 1850.	
d. 6 OCT 1854.		Calorgy U., b. 1795,	13
Mary U., b. 1785	7	d. ca 1870.	
Ruffin U., b. 1787,	9	Murray U., b. 1 NOV 1797	14
d. 1866.		d. 10 FEB 1872.	
Parthenia U., b. 1788.	5	Sims U., b. 11 DEC 1808,	17
Whitney U., b. 1793,	11	d. 1880	
d. 1863		Clegg U.	16

*Moses' Children*



Whitney Upchurch was of the 6th generation of Upchurches in America. An outline of his subclan, to the extent that details are available, is provided below through the 9th generation.

XID  
11

#### OUTLINE

- VI. Whitney Upchurch b. 1793 (Franklin Co., NC) d. 1863, md. 3 JAN 1811 (Wake Co., NC) Elizabeth Goodwin, b. ca 1795 (Wake Co., NC). 11  
12
1. Duncan Lemuel U., b. ca 1825, md. Elizabeth Edwards. 2715,3000  
(I) Virginia U., b. 1857.
  2. Richard Dillard U., b. 1820, d. 1906, md. 1848 Jane Phelps, 767,2712  
b. 1826, d. 1857.  
(I) Kittie U., b. 1853,md. 1872 Nathan Augustus Johnson, 2711,2713  
b. 1845.  
(1) Mable Johnson. 2714
  3. Hesper Ann U., b. ca 1828, md. 2 AUG 1856 (Wake Co., NC) Alfred Daughtry. 2716  
(I) Lucetta U., b. 1858, md. William Womble. 3001,4694  
(1) Bessie Womble, md. Ernie Holt. 4695,4696
  4. James M. U., b. ca 1830, md. Isabell \_\_\_\_\_, b. ca 1831. 2717  
(I) James U., b. ca 1859. 3002  
(II) Nancy U., b. ca 1860 3003  
(III) Charles McFarland U., b. ca 1864, d. ca 1902, md. 3004  
Florence Magnolia Wadsworth, b. 18 SEP 1874,  
d. 9 JUL 1921.  
(1) Clyde Charles U., Sr., b. 17 DEC 1895, d. 25 NOV 3082  
1943 (bur. Oakwood Cem., Raleigh, NC).  
(2) Blanch U., md. William Nowell. 3081
  - (IV) William U., b. ca 1866. 3005  
(V) Dellar U., b. ca 1868. 3006  
(VI) Benjamin U., b. ca 1856. 4115  
(VII) \_\_\_\_\_, b. ca 1855.  
(VIII) Frank Thomas U., b. ca 1851. 4116
  5. Martha U., b. ca 1832. 2718
  6. Bennett A. U. (CSA), b. 10 MAY 1834, d. 28 MAR 1872 (Wake Co., NC), md. 31 JAN 1858 (Chatham Co., NC Sarah A. 2719  
Lawrence, b. 4 OCT 1836 (NC), d. 5 FEB 1897 (Wake Co., NC). 2825  
(I) Missouri H. U., b. ca 1860 (NC), md. Jeff Stevens. 2826,2838  
(1) Oras Stevens, md. Ullallia Johnson. 3597,3600
  - (II) Lucy J. U., b. ca 1861 (NC), md. Freeman Norris. 2827,2839  
(1) J. Roy Norris. 2851  
(2) Lizzy Norris. 3596
  - (III) Thomas Benton U., Sr., b. ca AUG 1864 (NC), md. 2828  
OCT 1889 Molly Johnson. 2840  
(1) Mary Florence U., b. 19 MAY 1892 (Moore Co., NC), 3524  
md. 3 JUN 1914 (Raeford, NC) Hugh Archie Cameron, 3533  
b. 24 OCT 1880 (Harnett Co., NC), d. 7 NOV 1949.
  - (2) Maude Hyacinth U., b. 29 FEB 1893, md. 22 JAN 3525  
1920 (Moore Co., NC) Robert Bask Lewis, b. 3534  
17 NOV 1893 (Wilmington, NC).
  - (3) Clyde Emmett U., Sr., b. 5 MAR 1894 (Moore Co., 3526  
NC), d. 29 SEP 1972, md. 20 OCT 1916 Alice  
Johnson, b. \_\_\_\_\_ (Raeford, NC). 3535



		XID
	(4) Carrie Marie U., b. 6 APR 1898, d. 27 SEP 1904.	3527
	(5) Bennie Lee U., b. 1 FEB 1900 (Raeford, NC), md. 11 NOV 1925 Alan Marshall McGee, Sr., b. ____, d. ____ (Fort Lauderdale, FL).	3536
	(6) Thomas Benton U., Jr., b. 19 MAY 1902 (Raeford, NC), md. 15 FEB 1930 Anne Hoyl.	3529 3537
	(7) Lawrence U., b. 8 AUG 1904, d. 25 APR 1913.	3530
	(8) Lewis Marvin U., Sr., b. 25 AUG 1906, d. 4 JUN 1960 (Pinehurst, NC), md. 27 AUG 1930 (Fayetteville, NC) Mary Susan Spell.	3531 3538
	(9) Alice McDowell U., b. 11 MAR 1911, d. 19 MAR 1911.	3532
(IV)	William Joseph U., b. 25 SEP 1867 (Harnett Co., NC), d. 3 JUL 1933 (Thomasville, GA), md. 16 OCT 1892 (Wake Co., NC) Otilia Rosalie Johnson, b. 3 MAY 1871, (Wake Co., NC), d. 17 APR 1934 (Thomasville, GA).	2829 2837
	(1) Clara Agnes U., b. 28 JUL 1893, d. MAY 1918, md. Julian Samuel Johnson.	2831 2841
	(2) Joseph Staley U., b. 20 JAN 1894, d. 1917, md. Thelma Knight.	2832 2842
	(3) William Worth U., Sr., b. 4 JUN 1898 (Carthage, NC), d. 30 MAR 1977, md. 19 SEP 1917 Mary Seaborn Roddenbery, b. 24 JUL 1900 (Thomasville, GA).	2833 2843
	(4) Lucy May U., b. 1 MAY 1901, d. 11 OCT 1925, md. Talbot Nunnalley, Jr.	2834 2847
	(5) Thelma Lucilla U., b. 4 DEC 1903, d. 6 MAR 1923, md. Loyd Pugh.	2835 2848
	(6) Rosalee U., b. 4 FEB 1907, d. 4 SEP 1935, md. Joseph Jackson Keyton.	2836 2849 2830
(V)	James Curtis U., b. 17 MAY 1870 (Middle Crk. Tsp., Wake Co., NC), d. 5 NOV 1942 (Jacksonville, FL) (Bur. Tallahassee, FL), md. 24 OCT 1895 Repsie Rochester Cotton, b. 11 JUL 1875 (Wake Co., NC), d. 3 OCT 1961 (Leon Co., FL)(Bur. Tallahassee, FL).	2850
	(1) Cecil Rochester U., b. 9 MAR 1897 (Pinehurst, NC) md. (1st) Roslyn Dedge; md. (2nd) MAY 1922 Annabelle Chairs; md. (3rd) 4 FEB 1962 Eldes Scruggs; md. (4th) 18 FEB 1979 Edna Kelly.	3493 3515 3516 3517, 3518
	(2) Jessie Wake U., b. 25 OCT 1899 (Pinehurst, NC), md. 19 APR 1919 (Tallahassee, FL) Marion Linwood Patterson, b. 11 SEP 1895 (Danville, VA), d. 17 SEP 1977 (Tallahassee, FL)(Bur. Tallahassee, FL).	3494 3505
	(3) Pearl Lounette U., b. 27 JAN 1902 (Cheraw, SC), md. JUL 1922 Irving B. Cox.	3495 3500
	(4) Louis James U., b. 17 APR 1904 (Cheraw, SC), d. 6 MAR 1907.	3496
	(5) Glenn Cotton U., b. 27 MAY 1906 (Cheraw, SC), d. 28 JAN 1918 (Bur. Tallahassee, FL).	3497
	(6) Sarah Estelle U., b. 8 SEP 1908 (Capitola, FL), d. 10 SEP 1909 (Bur. Tallahassee, FL).	3498
	(7) Henry Bennett U., b. 22 MAR 1910 (Capitola, FL), d. ____ (Bur. Tallahassee, FL), md. 1942 Elizabeth Register. (Issue = One son died at birth)(Unnamed).	3499 3504

UB VOL 2, NO 1, P 15

JAN 1981

CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID

Help is especially needed on six of the children of Moses U. 1  
 We have nothing but a name on son Clegg. For son, Gillium we have the 16,6  
 names of four children and little more. For the four daughters we  
 have only the following:

Letha U. - b. ca 1773, md. Hezekiah Massey	3,4
Mary U. - b. 1785, md. 5 FEB 1806 Adam Bunn	7,8
Parthenia U. - b. 1788, md. -- Smith	5
Calorgy U. - b. 1795 (Franklin Co., NC)- never married	13

Although much is yet to be collected, excellent progress has been made  
 on sons Ruffin, Whitney, Murray, Sims and Courtney. 9,11,14,17,1109

UB VOL 2, NO 2, P 15

APR1981

CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)
XID  
1

See IX. Reference Materials in this issue for details regarding  
 Ruffin U., a son of Moses U. See I. From The Editor in this issue : 9,1  
 for comments regarding some descendants of Moses U. - Dilly Kelly 638  
 and Ruth Jones. 2648

- A. Reproduction of the will of Ruffin Upchurch, Head of the Ruffin  
U. Subclan of the Moses U. Clan.

XID  
9  
1

"WILL: RUFFIN UPCHURCH - WAKE CO., NC  
PROBATED: Aug Term 1866, Rec. 34, Pg. 160, File 1197  
WRITTEN: 31 MAY 1858.

In the name of God Amen,

I Ruffin Upchurch of the County of Wake and State of North Carolina being of sound mind and memory and considering the uncertainty of this frail and transitory life do therefore make publish and declare this to be my last will and testament. That is to say:

First after all my just and lawful debts are paid and discharged, that is to say, the residue of my estate, both real and personal I give and bequeath and dispose of as follows:

ITEM 1. I do give my beloved wife Martha the tract of land whereon I now live known as the land of New River during her natural lifetime or widowhood.

ITEM 2. I give also the residue containing all the balance of my property to my wife her natural lifetime or widowhood.

ITEM 3. It is my desire that after the decease of my wife Martha, that is to say, if she dies before the youngest child Eliza Jane should come of age, the following from Wesley down, namely to wit Gas. children Wesley, Gaston, Margaret, Amy, Franklin, Aby, Eliza Jane.

ITEM the 4. It is my desire that the above named children remain on my lands with the privilege of all my property until my youngest child becomes of age or marry's.

ITEM the 5. If any of the above named children should marry they should seek another home.

ITEM the 6. Tis my will and desire that my executor to this my will shall have full power and control of all my above named property at his disposal to sell and divide all the named property equally amongst all my children share by share or their lawful heirs. Likewise I make constitute and appoint my said son A. Upchurch to be executor of this my last will and testament hereby revoking all former wills by me made. In witness I have hereunto subscribed my name and affixed my seal the thirty first day of May in the year of Our Lord One Thousand Eight Hundred and Fifty-eight.

Signed Sealed and  
Acknowledged in the  
presence of  
(or M) N. Thrailhile  
Lima (?) Upchurch

his  
Ruffin X Upchurch (seal)  
mark

## B. Commentary On The Will Of Ruffin Upchurch

XID

We are publishing the Ruffin U. will in hopes of stimulating some communication from his descendants. Fragmentary information is available on his line but much more is needed. He is said to have had 22 children by his three wives. Quite a job is left to do just to identify the children. Ruffin U. was born about 1787, probably in Franklin Co., NC and he undoubtedly moved with his father Moses U. to Chatham Co., NC about 1800. Ruffin U. is shown on the Chatham Co. NC Census in 1810, 1820, 1830, and 1840, but in 1850 and 1860 he is shown in Wake Co., NC. In the will Ruffin U. clearly indicates his desire to take care of his wife and seven children who were under age at the time the will was written. Wesley U., the oldest of the under age children, would have been 19 years old at the time. Ruffin's third wife, who was living with him at the time the will was written in 1858 is thought to have been Martha Trackskill, b. 1810. She is probably the one who witnessed the will although the spelling on the will appears to be "M. Thraihile" of M. Thraikill". The name of the other witness is written unclearly but appears to be Lima Upchurch. More definite information on the witnesses is needed. The son, A. Upchurch, designated as executor is as yet otherwise unidentified. The listing of the seven children is quite clear but just preceeding the list of seven are the two words "Gas. Children" which appears to be equivalent to an enumeration. One interpretation could be that Ruffin was making a provision for "the children of Gas. (Gaston) Upchurch?". To make a provision for the children of an older deceased son would be normal but in this case Gaston is still a minor and is listed in the will being about 16 years of age at the time the will was written. Clarification of the words "Gas. Children" is needed. Our incomplete record of the children of Ruffin U. shows the following:

	<u>XID</u>
1. John, b. 1826	3418
2. Rufus, b. 1831	678
3. Olando Jackson, b. 1833	1034
4. Thomas, b. 1834	3421
5. Catherine, b. 1838	3423
6. James Wesley, b. 1840	2824
7. Gaston (Augusta) (Gashern) b. 1842	2822
8. Margaret, b. 1844	2114
9. Anne (Anna) (Amy) (Anny), b. 1846	2819
10. B. Franklin, b. 1847	2821
11. Abba (Abby) (Aby), b. 1849	2818
12. Eliza Jane, b. 1850	2820

There is some indication that there were two older sons - Ruffin U. (Jr.) b. 1815 and William U., b. 1820.

Any details on this Subclan will be most welcome.

UB VOL 3, NO 1, P 11

JAN 1982

CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

From Mayfred (Upchurch) Boleware, of the William U. IV/Abel U. 6823,160/580  
 Sr. Subclan, we have obtained copies of three deeds involving Moses 1  
 U. The first of these was made on 25 JUL 1803 between Moses U.,  
 then a resident of Franklin Co., NC, and Joel Cook of Chatham Co.,  
 NC. The 550 acres purchased by Moses U. in Chatham Co., NC may be  
 the first recorded evidence that Moses U. and his brother, Nathan U. 1,78  
 were planning to move to the Chatham/Wake border. However, it is  
 noted that Nathan U. and R. Norris witnessed this 1803 deed of 78  
 Moses U. so it is possible that Nathan U. was already in the 1  
 Chatham/Wake area as early as 1803. The property was outlined by  
 ten straight lines, one of which touched upon Pitts Creek and the  
 eastern most of which consisted of a segment of the Wake and Chatham  
 County line. The land adjoined that of Joseph Taylor, John Pitts, Jr.  
 Joseph Pitts, and John Pitts, Sr. The land lay across the road from  
 Fayetteville to the University (University of NC at Chapel Hill).  
 Moses added to this purchase and subtracted from it in several  
 transactions over the next several decades. We can say with reason-  
 able certainty that this 550 acre tract lies along the Wake/Chatham border,  
 north of Highway 64, east of Highway 751 and south of State Road 1740.  
 Continued study of the records should reveal a more precise location for  
 the property.

In the second deed, Moses U. purchased in 1807 100 acres of land  
 in Chatham Co., NC from Joseph Brantly. This land adjoined the property  
 of Moses U. and that of Taylor. The deed was witnessed by Gilliam U. 6  
 (a son of Moses U.) and by Bailes (?) Sears. In the third deed a land  
 grant of 50 acres was made in Chatham Co., NC by the State of NC to  
 Moses U. This was in 1824. The land was on Pitts Creek and joined  
 lands of Hugh McClain and Ruffin U., the latter being a son of Moses U. 9,1



UB VOL3, NO 3, P 91

JUL 1982

CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)

1

The clearing of a lot to build a new Town Hall in Apex, NC has led to the discovery of a gravesite of Alvania U., a granddau of Moses U. She is the dau of Sims U., b. 1808, d. 1880. The cemetery, which also included the husband of Alvania U., is the old Methodist Cemetery which has been long unused and overgrown. The two stones read:

Alvania U., wife of B. R. Hargrove  
19 JUL 1848 - 28 AUG 1923  
B. R. Hargrove, 1st Lieut. Co. E., 8th N. C. Regt.  
11 JUL 1843 - 29 JUL 1916

Perhaps there are more stones in the cemetery relevant to Upchurch history. We have no record of any descendants of the above couple. Thanks go to Mrs. Alan C. Dasen, nee Faye Mitchell, a member of the Moses U./Whitney U. 4707 Subclan, for this tip on the old cemetery. (It is another coincidence that Faye works in the same building in Raleigh, NC as your Editor's sister-in-law, Mrs. Lois Sledge Brown).

UB VOL 3, NO 4, P 131

OCT 1982

CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

Additional information has been acquired recently for the descendants of Sims U., son of Moses U. and Head of the Moses U./Sims U. Subclan. This information is derived from a book entitled "The Councils - from Virginia to North Carolina", by Irma Ragan Holland, Second Edition. Robert "Bobbie" Council, Jr., b. 1768, d. 1861 md. Rebecca Weathers, b. 1781. This couple lived in the northeastern section of Chatham Co., NC where Moses U. settled. In due course Albert Carberry Council, a gs of Bobbie Council, md. Lewraney U., a dau of Sims U. Another dau of Sims U., Queenetta U. had a son John Sims Lasater, who md. Theodocia Council, a ggd of Bobbie Council. In another such linkage Emily Catherine U., a dau of Murray U., and a gd of Moses U. md. Addison "Dock" Council, a son of Bobbie Council. We are corresponding with Mrs. Leo Donald Lasater (nee Edna Earl Eakes) of Durham, NC whose husband is a descendant of the above mentioned John Sims Lasater. She is providing considerable information.

17

9062

-,666,17

17,675,331

3312

28,14,1

29

9154

331

UB VOL 4, NO 1, P 13

JAN 1983

XID  
1CLAN 1 (MOSES UPCHURCH)

Descendants of Courtney U., son of Moses U., have regularly held 1109,1  
an Upchurch reunion in Mississippi. For the present year the gathering  
will be held on Saturday, JUNE 18, 1983 at the Leroy Percy State Park  
in Hollandale, MS. All Upchurches and Upchurch relatives are invited.  
For more information contact: Genevieve Tharp Little, 812 Polk Street,  
Vicksburg, MS 39180.

INTRODUCTION AND OUTLINE OF THE SIMS UPCHURCH SUBCLAN OF  
THE MOSES UPCHURCH CLAN

XID

17

1

Sims U. was born in Chatham Co., NC, 11 DEC 1808 shortly after his father, Moses U. had settled there following a move from the Moccasin Creek area of NC, approximately 30 miles to the east of the Chatham site. As far as we know, Sims U. was a farmer and lived his entire life span of 72 odd years at the one site in Chatham Co., NC.

17

1

While our search of the records is incomplete it appears that Sims was a limited holder of land. His principle acquisition seems to have been 232 acres given to him by his father in a deed dated 5 OCT 1825. This was the homeplace of Moses U. and from the nature of the deed (transfer of stock, household effects, etc.) we presume that the elderly Moses (age 72 at the time) was striking a deal with his youngest son, Sims (age 17 at the time) whereby the son would remain at the homeplace and take care of mother and father and one unmarried daughter, Calorgy U. Our best understanding is that this site was on the southwestern corner of Pitts Creek and present-day State Road 1742 in Chatham Co., NC, just one mile west of the Chatham Co./Wake Co., NC border. Thus, the homesite of Moses U. was about three miles west of Green Level in Wake Co., NC where Nathan U. I, a brother of Moses U. settled when the two of them settled in the area about 1802.

13

78,1

At the time Moses U. gave his son property in 1825 he had already given/sold other parcels of land to his other children. It is possible that Moses U. lived on one of the other parcels at one time or another. Today descendants of Moses U. point to a dwelling in the southwestern intersection of Pitts Creek and SR 1742 and say that an older foundation nearby was the site of the "Sims Upchurch Home". Possibly it was also the site of the original Moses U. home.

The 1832 marriage of Sims U. to Abigail Olive in Wake Co., NC was witnessed by A.U. We surmise that A.U. was most likely Acril U., a first cousin of Sims U. since Acril U. also md. an Olive girl (Mary Olive). Abigail was struck by lightning in 1847 and died. Sims married twice more but we believe all of his children were by Abigail. As the mid-century mark was reached, Sims either found he had excess land or he was pressed for cash. In any case, he sold 100 acres to his brother, Murray U. in FEB 1849 and 88 acres on 15 JAN 1851 to Abimeles Barbee. The latter deed was never recorded but came into the hands of Etta Belle (Lewter) West, a descendant of Murray U.

17,18

84

171

14

836,14

Sims U. is reported to have been a worker in Mt. Pisgah Baptist Church located four miles north of the Sims U. homeplace. This church was founded in the early 1800's and it seems quite likely that both Moses U. and Nathan U. I and their descendants could have been documented in the early records. Some of these records are reported to be at the Southeastern Baptist Seminary at Wake Forest, NC. We must make looking at these records a high priority.

1

78



On 29 MAY 1983 one of our cousins, Nancy Crayton Dobbins sent your Editor an excerpt of the obituary of J. H. U. that appeared on 6 DEC 1864 in The Daily Confederate newspaper of Raleigh, NC. This reports the death of J. H. U., son of Sims U., on 13 NOV 1864 (Charlottesville, VA) from wounds received in battle. From this article we learn that Sims U. had five sons and four sons-in-law in Confederate service. From incomplete records we had deduced that Sims U. had a son, O. Henderson U., b. ca 1837 and a son, James T. U., b. ca 1839. With additional bits of information now in hand it appears likely that O. Henderson U. was in fact James Henderson U. and that James T. U. was in fact James Henderson U., there being one son rather than two.

XID  
8797  
2039

2039,17

In the West UPCHURCH FAMILY book a few details are given on the Sims U. family. She especially credits Dr. Coy Tillman U., a ggs of Sims U., as being the first person to systematically search the Upchurch records in VA. He gave the fruits of his search freely to Mrs. West in 1956 but died an untimely death in 1960 before he could learn of the breakthroughs that charted the broad outline of our family which we know so well today.

2042

The children of Moses U., along with Sims U. are listed below:

	XID
1. Letha U.	3
2. Parthenia U.	5
3. Gillium U.	6
4. Mary U.	7
5. Ruffin U.	9
6. Whitney U.	11
7. Calorgy U.	13
8. Murray U.	14
9. Clegg U.	16
10. Sims U.	17
11. Courtney U.	1109

Calorgy U. was the only one of the eleven who did not marry. Of Letha U. (md. Hezekiah Massy), Parthenia U. (md. \_\_\_\_\_ Smith), Gillium U. (md. Sarah \_\_\_\_\_), and Mary U. (md. Adam Bunn), we have scant records. An outline on Whitney U. has been published (UB, Vol. 1, No. 4, 1980) and West has treated Murray U. in her book. Our cousin Genevieve Ellen (Tharp) Little of Vicksburg, MS (812 Polk St., MS 39180) intends to publish a treatise on Courtney U. and his descendants. She is a descendant of Courtney U. We anxiously await her publication and urge all to cooperate with her. Note that Sims U. had a son Courtney U.

1109

17, 633

The Moses U./Sims U. Subclan is presented below in outline form through the 9th generation to the extent that information is available. Corrections and additions are solicited.

1,17

#### OUTLINE

	XID
X. Sims U., b. 11 DEC 1808, d. 1880, md. (1st) 11 DEC 1832 (Wake Co., NC) Abigail Olive, b. 1810, d. 1847 (Killed by lightning), md. (2nd) (Chatham Co., NC) Matilda Temples, md. (3rd) 23 DEC 1852 (Chatham Co., NC) Tabitha Williams.	17
	18
	19
	20

	D	
A. J. Henderson U., SGT, CSA, b. ca 1837, d. 13 NOV 1864	03	
(Charlottesville, VA)(killed in Civil War), md. Delia Williams,	4114	
b. ca 1840.		
1. Mary T. (Mollie) U., b. 1860, d. 1929 (Bur. Mt. Pisgah	3315	
Bapt. Ch., Chatham Co., NC) md. Andrew W. Byrd, b.	3316	
1857, d. 1927 (Bur. same as WIF).		
a. C. Earl Byrd.	3318	
2. No further issue.		
B. Wiliford U., b. ca 1841.	688	
C. Winslow U., b. ca 1842.	690	
D. Courtney U., CSA, b. ca 1846, md. 14 JAN 1873 Eliza Lewis,	633,2040	
b. ca 1848.		
1. Louis Henry U., b. 20(10?) MAY 1875, d. 12 NOV 1956	632	
(Bur. Apex, NC Cem.), md. 12 AUG 1897 Almarada A Howell,	2041	
b. 25 MAY 1881, d. 7 MAR 1953.		
a. Coy Tillman U., MD, b. 10 JAN 1899, d. 20 DEC 1960,	2042	
md. 17 JUL 1926 Gertrude Armstrong, b. 28 AUG 1903.	1626	
b. Osby J. U., b. 10 JUN 1901, d. 18 OCT 1925.	672	
c. Tyree U.	683	
d. Burnest U.	1792	
e. Edna U.	1793	
f. Mary U.	669	
g. Jesse U.	650	
h. Katherine U.	660	
2. Roxana U., b. ca 1873	4118	
3. Lurabia U., b. MAR 1880.	4119	
E. Winship U., b. ca 1844.	689	
F. Lewraney (Luraney) U., b. 29 JUN 1836, d. 19 JUL 1876, md.	666	
Albert Carberry "Hamp" Council, b. 22 MAR 1833, d. 5 DEC 1894.	9062	
1. Adolphus Wayland Council, Sr., b. SEP 1859, d. 30 SEP 1915,	9055	
md. 23 JAN 1889 Annie Elizabeth Payne, b. 12 NOV 1867, d.	9063	
5 MAY 1948.		
a. Lucinda Grace Council, b. 26 FEB 1890, d. 24 MAY 1972,	9072	
md. 18 OCT 1922 Carey W. Carrick, b. 6 JUL 1892,	9089	
d. 16 FEB 1966.		
b. Annie Laura Council, b. 4 APR 1926, d. 21 MAY 1969,	9073	
Never married.		
c. Iris Lunana Council, b. 3 DEC 1893.	9074	
d. Adolphus Wayland Council, Jr., b. 7 MAR 1896, d.	9075	
29 JUL 1896.		
e. Ruth Payne Council, b. 27 AUG 1898.	9076	
f. Albert Lawrence Council, b. 3 AUG 1901, d. 11 APR 1974,	9077	
md. 3 SEP 1927 Blanche Eugenia Powell, b. 16 MAY 1901.	9090	
g. Mary Elizabeth Council, b. 6 APR 1904, d. 27 FEB 1975,	9078	
md. 18 OCT 1928 Ralph L. Asbury, Sr., b. 13 APR 1905.	9091	
h. Lois Elsie Council, b. 31 JAN 1907.	9079	
2. Henry Jackson Council, b. 2 SEP 1861, md. (1st)	9056	
Julia Savage <u>1</u> /, md. (2nd) Annie Armstrong.	9064,9065	
a. <u>1</u> / Julia Council, md. Frank Pernelle.	9080,9092	
b. Frances Council, md. Francis Smith.	9081,9093	

		XID
3.	Ada Henderson Council, b. 15 SEP 1863, d. 29 NOV 1929,	9057
	md. Hiram Wesley Markham, b. 6 JUN 1855, d. 10 NOV 1923.	9066
	a. Teresa Markham, md. Adolphus C. Scott.	9094,9099
	b. Roberta Markham, b. 11 SEP 1886, d. 2 APR 1961, md.	9095
	E. Frank Mulholland, b. 17 NOV 1891, d. 12 SEP 1976.	9100
	c. Leonard Markham, b. 1890, md. Olivia Kelly.	9096,9101
	d. William Commie Markham, Sr., b. 23 MAR 1891, md.	9097
	25 DEC 1915 Iola Mulholland, b. 15 AUG 1890, d.	9102
	6 APR 1949.	
	e. Thalios Jackson Markham, Sr., b. 15 SEP 1897, md.	9098
	26 NOV 1916 Dillie Mae Williams, b. 7 MAY 1895.	9103
4.	James Calvin Council, b. 15 OCT 1865, md. (1st)	9058
	Lela Merritt 1/, md (2nd) Minnie Herring.	9067,9068
	a.1/ Vesta Council, Never married.	9082
	b.1/ Albert Council, md. Werna Judd.	9083,9104
	c.1/ Mary Council, md. Curtis Carroll.	9084,9105
5.	Albert Vic Council, b. 22 NOV 1867, d. 9 SEP 1936 (Bur.	9059
	Green Level Cem., Wake Co., NC), md. Mattie Johnson,	9069
	b. 17 NOV 1870, d. 31 JUL 1941 (Bur.- as HUS).	
	a. Albert Council, b. -, d. (Bur.- as FAT).	9085
6.	Cora Celena Council, b. 14 DEC 1869, d. 18 FEB 1950 (Bur.	9060
	Berea Bapt. Ch. Cem.), md. 24 DEC 1896 George Malphus	9070
	Parrish, b. 30 MAR 1870, d. 1 MAY 1950 (Bur.-as WIF).	
	a. Allene Parrish, b. 1 NOV 1900, md. 18 MAY 1929	9106
	Omer Korb Goodwin, b. 22 AUG 1896, d. 18 NOV 1975.	9108
	b. Grady Carlyle Parrish, b. 13 SEP 1906, d. 10 MAR 1976,	9107
	md. 18 MAY 1935 Josephine Lucy Cates, b. 12 NOV 1907.	9109
7.	William Winslow Council, b. 20 FEB 1873, d. 4 DEC 1952 (Bur.	9061
	Green Level Bapt. Ch., Wake Co., NC), md. 22 DEC 1898	
	Martha Elizabeth Baucom, b. 7 JUN 1875, d. 3 JUN 1937	9071
	(Bur.-as HUS).	
	a. Thelma Lewraney Council, b. 13 FEB 1900, d. 7 DEC 1973,	9086
	md. (1st) 5 OCT 1922 Roy Wilmer Penny, b. -, d. JAN 1951,	9110
	md.(2nd) SEP 1958 Ernest Nelson, b.-, d. JUL 1962.	9111
	b. Dessie Marie Council, b. 10 OCT 1904, md. 19 JUL 1924	9087
	Logan William Bishop, b. 26 JUN 1903, d. 22 FEB 1960.	9112
	c. Maude Lavada Council, b. 19 NOV 1906, md. 16 APR 1927	9088
	James William Holmes, b. 22 MAY 1897, d. 5 JUL 1965.	9113
8.	Lewrancy Aby Council, b. 14 DEC 1876, d. 14 DEC 1876.	9295
G.	Parthenia U., b. 1832, d. 1906, md. 1853 Lucien B. Yates,	673,3217
	b. 2 AUG 1827, d. 8 JUL 1907 (Bur. Mt. Pisgah Bapt. Ch., Chatham	
	Co., NC).	
	1. George T. Yates, md. Leonie M. ____.	3317
	2. Robert Yates, b. ca 1854.	4117
	3. Sally Yates, b. ca 1857.	4124
	4. William Simms Yates, b. ca 1859, md. 1882 Annie Horton,	4125,7403
	b. 1864.	
	a. Alma Yates, b. (Wake Co., NC), md. J. C. Bowman, MD.	7397,7402
	b. Majorie Beatrice Yates, b. (Merry Oaks, NC).	7398
	c. Leonita Yates, b. (Montgomery Co., NC), md.	7399
	Eugene Gray Smith.	7406
	5. Mary Yates, b. ca 1863.	4126
	6. Winslow Yates, b. ca 1867.	4127
	7. Celestina Yates, b. ca 1869.	4128

		XID
H.	Quinetta U. (Twin), b. ca 1835, md. 12 JAN 1852 (Chatham Co., NC)	675
	Joseph Bell Lasater, CSA, b. 1830, d. 30 AUG 1861 (Camp Jones, VA).	3308
1.	John Sims Lasater, b. 17 MAR 1856 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 7 AUG 1918 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), md. (1st) 10 OCT 1878	3310
	Theodocia Council 1/, b. 11 OCT 1858 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 7 NOV 1905 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), md. (2nd)	3312
	Lee Hawkins Andrews.	9591
a.1/	Leo Dexter Lasater, b. 28 JUL 1879 (Chatham, Co., NC), d. 17 OCT 1940 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), md. 27 DEC 1902 (Durham, NC) Beatrice Irene Fox, b. 27 NOV 1884 (Baltimore, MD), d. 23 OCT 1960 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC).	9041 9046
b.1/	Joseph Merrimon Lasater, Sr., b. 10 MAY 1882 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 8 AUG 1952 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), md. (1st) Frances M. Stallings, b. 7 OCT 1888 (Durham, NC), d. 14 JUL 1909 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), md. (2nd) 3 AUG 1913 (Durham, NC) Lois Elza Roberts, b. 28 FEB 1894 (Stem, NC), d. 10 FEB 1971 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC).	9042 9047 9048
c.1/	Annie Pearl Lasater, b. 20 NOV 1888, md. 5 JUN 1911 William Edgar Whitaker, Sr., b. 15 DEC 1888, d. 10 JUL 1967. <i>dict Dec. 1985</i>	9043 9049
d.1/	John Nereus Lasater, Sr., b. 5 AUG 1890, d. 25 FEB 1933 (Bur. Durham, NC), md. 16 DEC 1920 Hattie Lou Howard, b. 15 AUG 1892, d. 16 AUG 1965 (Bur. Durham, NC).	9044 9050
e.1/	Ella Gladys Lasater, b. 22 AUG 1900, d. 14 JUL 1960, md. 20(30) NOV 1920 Ira Winfred Cheek, b. 13 JAN 1896, d. 1982.	9045 9051
2.	Lenora Lasater.	3311
3.	A. C. Lasater, b. ca 1855.	9585
4.	Minerva Lasater, b. 1856, md. Winfield Scott.	9586, 9589
5.	Rebecca Lasater, b. 1858, md. Joseph Lawrence.	9587, 9590
6.	Abigail Lasater, md. _____ Howell.	9588
I.	Lucetta U. (Twin), b. ca 1835, md. (1st) 28 AUG 1855 Mathew Henderson Council 1/, b. ca 1835 (Killed in Civil War), md. (2nd)	665 3313
	J. Sam "Jack" Williams 2/.	3314
1.1/	James Council, b. ca 1858.	9300
2.1/	Fenner Council, b. ca 1860.	9301
3.2/	Alice Williams, md. John Manley U. (2nd cousins), b. 3 APR 1874(1878), d. 18 DEC 1948 (Bur. Chatham Co., NC).	7499, 4123
	a. Lila U., md. Grady Marcom.	7497, 9303
4.2/	Malinda Williams, Never married, d.	9302
J.	Alvania U., b. 19 JUL 1848, d. 28 AUG 1923 (Bur. Apex, NC), md. B. R. Hargrove, b. 11 JUL 1843, d. 29 JUL 1915 (Bur.-as WIF).	2038 3309
K.	James T. U., b. ca 1839 (note XID 4113 & 2039 could be the same).	4113
	<i>J. Henderson U.</i>	



UB VOL 4, NO 4, PP 131 - 133

OCT 1983

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

Among the several individuals in the extended Upchurch family who are doing serious genealogical research we wish at this time to mention especially Mrs. Randall Keith Little (nee Genevieve Ellen Tharp). 10340 She is a member of the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan and she has 1/1109 become keenly interested in the Upchurches of Mississippi. Sometime in 1984 she hopes to publish her work. It should be of great interest to the descendants of Moses U. as the descendants of his son 1 Courtney U. are prominently represented in MS. Of course several 1109 other Upchurch Clans have been represented in MS at one time or another, and we hope to learn much from her publication when it appears. From experience your Editor knows that she is a very meticulous researcher and we know that whatever she publishes will have a hallmark of excellence. We anxiously await the publication of her work and will record in the UB more details about availability and price when they become available. In the meantime, any interested parties could write to her at 812 Polk Street, Vicksburg, MS 39180.

Mrs. Kenneth Morgan Griffith (nee Nancy Crayton Dobbins) is a 8797 member of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. While searching records 1/11 she encountered a newspaper article of relevance to the Moses U./ 1 Sims U. Subclan. The newspaper article, published 119 years ago 17 reveals not only family history but a poetic approach to dealing with tragic events during those days. Mrs. Griffith's letter reads as follows:

"Dear Phillip,

I was down at the Library of Congress today reading some old newspapers I had ordered and came across an obituary of J. H. Upchurch that I thought you would be interested in. I am sure this is the Henderson Upchurch, son of Sims, grandson of Moses (see Belle West's Upchurch Family of England, Virginia, and North Carolina, pp. 80-81).

Best to you,  
Nancy Griffith"

The article quoted in its entirety reads:

"The Daily Confederate, Raleigh, NC., Tuesday 6 DEC 1864  
Obituary

Sergt. J. H. Upchurch, Co. I, 6th N.C. Regt., died at Charlottesville, VA., Nov. 13th, 1864, from a wound in the left arm, received at the battle of Belle Grove, VA., 19th Oct. 1864, in the 26th year of his age.

How true it is that

"Death loves a shining mark!"

Why should the grim monster select one who, as a christian, illustrated his profession by an upright walk; as a Mason, carried his gavel and square in his heart; as a neighbor, kind and obliging; as a friend, true as steel; as a husband, affectionate and kind; as a father, provident and indulgent; as a son, obedient with filial reverence? He was the eldest

XID

son of Sims, Esq. of Chatham County, who has given five sons and four sons-in-law to the Army. He married Delia, daughter of M. D. Williams, Esq. who, with one child, mourns an irreparable loss. Amid the jewels that have been sacrificed upon our country's alter, there was none brighter than Sergt. Upchurch; no libation upon liberty's shrine, was purer or holier than his, for it came from a heart that beat only for his country's independence, his country's rights, and his country's glory. His gallantry had been witnessed upon Virginia's fields and Pennsylvania's mountains. In the long and dreary march, in the hour of defeat, and amid the shouts of triumph, he was the same, cool, calm, and collected. Had his life been spared, the future was bright before him and pregnant with the honors a victor wears - But, alas! he sleeps at home amid his friends, and has found his resting place near that holy spot of earth, from which, for nearly four years, he had helped to keep the invader; there -

"He sleeps his last sleep, he has fought his last battle, no sound shall wake him to glory again."

"May the guardian angel of our country's cause guard his hallowed resting place, and may his soul forever rest."

"In the bosom of his Father and his God."

Y"

The details of this article are presented here for the record and to give some "flavor of the times". The essential genealogical facts revealed by this article were used previously in the UB when an outline for the Moses U./Sims U. Subclan was published. (See UB, Vol. 4, No. 3, 1/ pg. 95).

-----

Ouida Catherine U., Captain U. S. Navy, Retired, is a member of 3656 the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan. She resides in the Washington, DC 1/9 area and your Editor has had a number of very pleasant phone conversations with her. We plan to meet for lunch at some future date. In the meantime, we will provide two "Upchurch Footnotes in U. S. History". Ouida distinguished herself by achieving a significant rank in the Officer Corps of the U. S. Navy in WW II when it was not normal for females to make such moves. The second footnote concerns the surrender of Japan at the end of WW II. Ouida was the first U. S. Armed Forces female to set foot on Japanese home soil at the end of the war. This came about because she was serving on a hospital ship which was sent into a Japanese port to recover quickly U. S. prisoners of war. As the gangplank was lowered the Senior Officer, about to descend, turned to Ouida and said "Uppy - you follow me."

A. Mt. Pisgah Baptist Church of Chatham Co., NC.

1. INTRODUCTION.

The settlement of Moses U. and Nathan U. I, Heads of two of the Upchurch Clans on the Wake/Chatham border in NC about 1802, brought about the creation of numerous records by which we can today learn more about these men and their descendants. One of the types of records concerns their involvement in church affairs. For a long time we have known that Mt. Pisgah Church could have involved these two families as it was established in 1814 and it was only about three miles north of where Moses and Nathan settled. It has been intriguing to speculate about what the church records might reveal. After some probing it was established that the early minutes of the church do exist and that they are located in the Baptist Historical Collection at Wake Forest University in Winston-Salem, NC. On February 20, 1984, your Editor had the opportunity to extract the minutes and it is with great pleasure that we present here a first attempt to bring the relevance of these minutes to light.

2. THE MINUTES OF MT. PISGAH CHURCH 14 AUG 1814 - 25 DEC 1869.

The minutes consist of a single rebound book. The minutes were obviously recopied many years ago perhaps more than once so that the handwriting does not always reflect that of the original scribe. Further study of the handwriting could lead to some conclusion as to when the recopying was done. Due to a shortage of time only certain aspects of the minutes were copied by your Editor and a portion of what was copied is reproduced here.

The first message in the minutes is as follows: "Church Book - For the Church at Yates Meeting House Chatham County, NC." "The principles of Faith in which the Baptist Church at Yates Meeting House was constituted August the 26th day A.D. 1814."

Note - articles 1-9 are listed along with some supplementary wording. All of this is signed by James Weathers and Robert T. Daniels.

Next comes the earliest listing of the church membership. This list was started in 1814 and to it were added additional names and notations up to about 1821. For convenience in the UB we will refer to this list of 78 individuals as Membership List A. It is reproduced below in its entirety. (Numbers added by your Editor).

## MEMBERSHIP LIST A (1814)

"The following are the male members of whom the church is constituted:

Entry No.	Bretheren	Notations	XID
1.	George Williams	Deacon 26 AUG 1814, Transferred	
2.	Harrison Trice	Deacon 26 AUG 1814, Dismissed	
3.	William Yates, Jr.	Clerk 26 AUG 1814, Transferred	
4.	Jethro Yates	Deacon, Transferred	
	Received since the church was constituted		
5.	Jesser Yates	Transferred	
6.	Hardy Yates	Transferred	
7.	Asa Barbee	Excommunicated MAR 1821	
8.	Green B. Babb	Dismissed 9 SEP 1815	
9.	Matthew Yates	Transferred	
10.	George Harward	Dismissed	
11.	George Williams, Jr.	Excommunicated 1827	
12.	Brittain Harward	Transferred	
13.	Joseph Barbee, Jr.		
14.	Robert T. Daniel	Dismissed 17 SEP 1818	
15.	Elleck Yates (Alexander)	By experience 8 JUL 1815, Dismissed OCT 1820	
16.	Bryn Harward	By experience 9 JUL 1815, Transferred	
17.	John Harward	By experience 9 JUL 1815, Transferred	
18.	James Wheeler	By experience 9 JUL 1815, Excommunicated AUG 1819	
19.	James Hudson	By experience JUL 1815, Transferred	
20.	Elisha Harward	By experience JUL 1815, Excommunicated 1826	
21.	Tapley Booth (Takley)	By experience JUL 1815, Dismissed	
22.	John Papmon	Deceased	
23.	Wiatt Harward (Wyatt ? -RPU)	By letter FEB 1821, Transferred	

"The Following are the names of the Female members of whome  
the church was constituted, viz:

<u>Sisters</u>			
24.	Elizabeth Barbee	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
25.	Rebecca Council	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
26.	Sarah Ellis	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
27.	Lucretia Vinson	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
28.	Rebecca Williams	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
29.	Mary Upchurch	16 AUG 1814, Transferred (Mary Simms) 2	
30.	Mary Horton	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
31.	Lydia Hudson	16 AUG 1814, Deceased	
32.	Nancy Yates	16 AUG 1814, Excommunicated JUN 1821	
33.	Elizabeth Moore	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
34.	Delphia Williams	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
35.	Tempy Kelley	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
36.	Gilly Trice	16 AUG 1814, Dismissed	
37.	Rhoda Harward (Rhodah Wheeler)	16 AUG 1814, Excommunicated FEB 1821	



Entry No.	Sisters	Notations	XID
38.	Miley Harward	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
39.	Polly Williams	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
40.	Elizabeth Perry	16 AUG 1814, Transferred	
41.	Macca Upchurch	16 AUG 1814, Transferred (Mackey Johnson)	79
42.	Easter Byrd	16 AUG 1814, Transferred (Esther Byrd)	810
43.	Nancy Hathy (?)	16 AUG 1814, Dismissed	
44.	Charity Rogers	16 AUG 1814, Dismissed	
	Received since the church was constituted		
45.	Rebecca Wall	Received, Excommunicated JUL 1820	
46.	Tempy Barbee	Received, Deceased	
47.	Macca Barbee	Received, Transferred	
48.	Synthis Beasley	Received, Dismissed	
49.	Polly Rigsbee	Received, Transferred	
50.	Betsy Yates (Elizabeth)	Received, Transferred, Dismissed FEB 1819	
51.	Betsy Yates	Received, Dismissed	
52.	Polly Yates	Received, Transferred	
53.	Miley Lewter	Received, Transferred	
54.	Rosey Casttelberry	Received, Transferred	
55.	Betsy Patrick	Received, Transferred	
56.	Penney C. Daniel	Received, Dismissed 7 SEP 1818	
57.	Winney Martin	Received, Excommunicated JUL 1820	
58.	Polly Yates	Rec'd 10 JUN 1815, Transferred	
59.	Celia Dod (Dodd)	Rec'd 10 JUN 1815, Transferred	
60.	Alpha Yates	Rec'd 8 JUL 1815, Dismissed OCT 1820	
61.	Piety Harward	Rec'd 7 JUL 1815, Dismissed	
62.	Milley Harward	Rec'd 12 AUG 1815, Transferred	
63.	Elizabeth Harward	Rec'd 12 AUG 1815, Transferred	
64.	Polley Rogers	Rec'd 19 SEP 1815, Transferred	
65.	Salley Cole (Polly)	Rec'd 19 SEP 1815, Transferred	
66.	Patsey Scott	Rec'd 13 OCT 1815, Deceased	
67.	Polley Segraves	Rec'd 4 NOV 1815, Excommunicated FEB 1821	
68.	Susan Balcom	Rec'd 9 MAR 1816, Dismissed	
69.	Elizabeth Winstead	Rec'd 9 NOV 1816-LTR, Dismissed	
70.	Priscilla Whitehead	Rec'd 9 NOV 1816-LTR, Dismissed	
71.	Frances Aaklnis (Adkins)	Rec'd 15 JUN 1817-ESP, Excommunicated	
72.	Elizabeth Self	Rec'd AUG 1817-ESP, Excommunicated	
73.	Elizabeth Ward	Rec'd AUG 1817-EX, Transferred	
74.	Amer Howell	Rec'd AUG 1818-EX, Transferred	
75.	Aggy Harward	Rec'd FEB 1821-LTR, Transferred	
76.	Dun the property of G. Upchurch (Gillium U.)	By experience SEP 1815, Excommunicated 1826	6
	"The following are the names of the coloured female members, viz:"		
77.	Ninia the property of E. Bensley	By experience	
78.	Dibba the property of G. Williams	By letter, Transferred	

"Soon after the Church was constituted the clerk was called off by draft to serve in the Malitia service of the United States at Norfolk, Virginia, and during his absence no other clerk was appointed. Consequently no record was made of the proceedings of the church until June 1815".

(Between 1814 and 1821 the minutes include brief notations on monthly meetings indicating who was received into membership, who was given a letter of dismissal and on proceedings concerning the morals of the members. Some of these items are mentioned in the commentary below. In March and April 1821 the church appeared to reach a crucial point. The minutes for MAR 1821 state "The church having been destitute of a Pastor for several years.....". We may conclude they decided to get their act together. Brother Wyatt Harward, previously ordained by a sister church, was elected to be Deacon and Clerk and to play a special role. In April 1821 a special committee was appointed to "examine" members. The committee consisted of - George Williams, Matthew Yates, William Yates and Wyatt Harward with Ezekiel Trice to assist. Subsequent to this a new membership role was generated and is reproduced in part below. This 1821 list is referred to in the UB as Membership List B. Note that as it appears in the minute book it was modified over the years through about 1857. - Editor).

#### MEMBERSHIP LIST B (1821)

"The following is a list of the male members whose names are transferred from the former list and who composed the committee of the church for the reception of such of the Brethern and Sisters as they may Fellowship and be fellowshipped by and the rejection of all those to the contrary, viz:"

Entry No.	Brethern	Notations	XID
1.	George Williams	Transferred 1821, Excommunicated APR 1826	
2.	<u>Matthew Yates</u>	Transferred 1821, Deceased SEP 1837	
3.	<u>William Yates</u>	Transferred 1821	
4.	Wyatt Harward	Transferred 1821, Dismissed OCT 1821	
5.	Jethro Yates	Transferred 1821, Dismissed OCT 1833	
6.	Jesser Yates	Transferred 1821, Excommunicated 3 AUG 1821	
7.	Hardy Yates	Transferred 1821, Letter 25 OCT 1850	
8.	Britton Harward	Transferred 1821, Deceased 14 AUG 1846	
9.	Joseph Barbee	Transferred 1821, Excommunicated 4 JUN 1832	
10.	Bry Harward (Bryan?)	Transferred 1821	
11.	John Harward	Transferred 1821, Excommunicated SEP 1841	
12.	James Hudson	Transferred 1821, Dismissed 5 AUG 1821	
	"New Male Members Since Revolution of the Church"		
13.	Isham Williams	By experience	
23.	Britton Mills	-, Excommunicated OCT 1827	
26.	Edmund Cole (Edmond)	By experience OCT 1822, Dismissed JAN 1823	813
28.	Burtis <u>Upchurch</u>	By experience OCT 1822, Dismissed SEP 1840	80
36.	Willie Buller	By experience OCT 1831, Excommunicated JUL 1844	
52.	Murry <u>Upchurch</u> (Murray)	By experience NOV 1836	14
57.	Sims Upchurch	By experience <u>OCT 1839</u>	17

Entry No.	Brethern	Notations	XID
74.	John H. Upchurch	By experience NOV 1845, Dismissed by letter	
90.	Isham Upchurch (Isham Sims U.)	By experience	25
98.	Henderson Upchurch (J. Henderson U.)	son of Anna U. & Abigail Olive	2039

155 = Total number of white males listed.

(List continues numbered to 126 and then with male unnumbered listings enough to bring the total up to 155 names. The last entry shows that the person joined in 1857).

The following .....Female Members:

1.	Elizabeth Barbee	Transferred 1821, Deceased OCT 1830	
6.	Mary Upchurch	Transferred 1821, Deceased	2
16.	Easther Byrd (Esther Byrd)	Transferred 1821, Dismissed SEP 1840	810
44.	Clargy Upchurch (Calorgy)	Transferred 1821 (Sims aunt?) dau. of Mrs. 3	
55.	Tabbitha Upchurch	Transferred 1821, Deceased NOV 1854	86
56.	Elizabeth Cole	Transferred 1821, Dismissed NOV 1823	
63.	Eliza Upchurch	Transferred 1821, Dismissed JAN 1840	
73.	Elizabeth Upchurch	Transferred 1821, Dismissed JAN 1840	
75.	Margarit Upchurch (Margaret Yates)	Transferred 1821, Dismissed 1840	81
115.	Nancy Upchurch (Nancy Scott)	By experience 1836, Deceased 26 JUL ----	15
122.	Abby Upchurch (Abigail Olive)	By experience OCT 1839, Deceased 6 MAY 1849	18
124.	Martha Upchurch	By experience OCT 1839, Dismissed by letter.	21
135.	Martha J. Upchurch (Martha Jane U.)	By experience AUG 1843, Dismissed by letter 1855	757
153.	Partheny Upchurch (Parthenia U.)	By experience NOV 1845 sister of Anna	673
156.	Emiler Upchurch		
176.	Quennetty Upchurch (Quinetta U.)	By experience 23 SEP 1844 dau. of Sims	675
177.	Loucetty Upchurch (Lucetta U.)	By experience 23 SEP 1844 " "	665
190.	Lourana Upchurch (Lewraney U.)	By experience 11 JAN 1851 " "	666
209.	Mary Upchurch	By experience AUG 1855	
219.	Antilier Upchurch	By experience SEP 1855, Dismissed by letter 1 OCT 1855	

235 = Total number of white females listed.

#### Coloured Male members

11. Eaton, servant of John Upchurch By experience NOV 1862
- 13 - Total number of coloured males listed.

#### Coloured Females listed

11. Nelley, slave of Acril Upchurch By experience NOV 1836, Died 84
12. Tiller, slave of Willie Fuller By experience JUN 1837, Excommunicated
13. Margaret, slave of Willie Fuller By experience JUN 1837, Excommunicated OCT 1838
- 25 - Total number of coloured females listed.

(Between 1821 and 1858 the church minutes contain various notations regarding the monthly meetings of the congregation as before. On 1 JAN 1858 a new membership list was prepared. This is being called List C. - Editor)

#### MEMBERSHIP LIST C (1858)

Entry No.	Brethern	Notations	XID
1.	-		
9.	Murray Upchurch	Transferred	14
12.	<u>Sims Upchurch</u>	Transferred	17
13.	Lution B. Yates ( <u>Lucian B. Yates</u> )	Transferred	3217
30.	*Isham S <sup>ms</sup> Upchurch	Transferred, Excommunicated JUL 1861	25
84.	Last transferred member		

#### Received Since Transfer List Prepared

85.	-		
107.	Winslow Upchurch	Rec'd by letter NOV 1863, d. 1865	690
110.	*I. S. Upchurch	Restored APR 1864	25
124.	Coatney Upchurch <i>Courtney</i>		1109
128.	Burtis Upchurch (Gilbert Burtis U.)		135
134.	Last white male entry		

#### Female Members

1.	-		
8.	Clargy Upchurch (Calorgy U.) <i>Clary Moses</i>		13
40.	Parthany Upchurch (Parthany Yates) ( <u>Parthenia U.</u> )		673
42.	Emaly Upchurch (Emaly Council)		
51.	Quinnetty Upchurch (Quinnetty <u>Lasater</u> ) ( <u>Quinetta U.</u> ) <i>Clary Simon</i>		675
52.	Lucetty Upchurch (Lucetty Council) (Lucetty Williams) Excom FEB 1865		665
57.	Delia Beavers (Delia Upchurch)		
61.	Lurany Upchurch (Lurany Council) (Lewrany U.) <i>Clary Simon</i>		666
80.	Mary Upchurch (Mary Foushee)		
94.	Delia G. Williams		
95.	Emaly Hudson (Emely Upchurch) Dismissed by letter 8 JAN 1860		

#### Received Since Transfer List Prepared

106.	Clary Upchurch		
136.	Alvany Upchurch <i>Alvania (?)</i> By experience SEP 1862 <i>Clary Simon</i>		
150.	Miley J. Upchurch		
161.	Last numbered female entry		
164.	Three unnumbered females present		

No coloured members listed

#### 3. COMMENTARY ON THE MT. PISGAH CHURCH MINUTED 1814-1869.

Most of the Upchurches mentioned in the minutes, including some whose names were changed through marriage have been identified and a partial outline of the Moses U. and Nathan U. Clans is reconstructed below in order to show relationships.



	Found in	
	Mt. Pisgah Minutes	XID
I. Moses U., b. 1753, d. 1853	No	1
md. 1772 Mary Sims, b. 1754, d. 1847	A29, B6	2
A. Gillium U., b. 1782, d. 1854	A76	6
(Gillium U. mention in that his slave Dun joined)		
B. Ruffin U., b. 1787, d. 1866.	No	11
1. Rufus U., b. 1831, d. 1882		678
md. Emily Hudson	C95	3205
C. Calorgy U., never married.	B44, C8	13
D. Murray U., b. 1797, d. 1872	B52, C9	14
md. 1st 1820 Nancy Scott, b. 1801, d. 1864.	B115	15
1. Martha U., b. 1821	B124	21
md. 1840 Simeon Yates.	-	
2. Isham Sims U., b. 1824, d. 1916	B90, C30	25
md. 1851 Adelia Beavers.	C57	26
a. Josephine Frances U., b. 1852	Yes	39
joined by experience OCT 1865.		
3. John H. U., b. 1826, never married.	B74	27
4. Emily Catherine U., b. 1828, d. 1924	C42	28
		29
5. , b. 1830, d. 1864. He is	Yes	30
not shown on B list but joined SEP 1849		
6. Mary A. U., b. 1837, d. 1885	C80	35
md. Phillip N. Foushee.	-	36
7. Clary U., b. 1843	C106	37
md. Vernon (or F.E.) Riggsbee.	-	38
E. Si , d. 1880	B57, C12	17
md , b. 1810, d. 1847.	B122	18
1. Parthenia U., b. 1832, d. 1906	B153, C40	673
md. Lucian B. Yates, b. 1827, d. 1907.	C13	3217
2. Quinetta U., b. ca 1835	B176, C51	675
md. Joseph Bell Lasater.	<i>Sims. Lasater</i>	3308
Twins 3. Lucetta U., b. ca 1835 <i>ugf y</i>	7, C52	665
md. Matthew Henderson Council,	-	3313
md. J. Sam Williams	-	3314
4. Lewraney U., b. 1836, d. 1876	B190, C61	666
md. Albert C. Council.	-	9062
5. James Henderson U., b. 1837, d. 1864	B98	2039
md. Delia Williams, b. 1840		4114
6. Winslow U., b. 1842. <i>Willsford 1840</i>	C107	690
7. Alvania U., b. 1848, d. 1923 <i>Willsford 1844-1861 mda</i>	C136	2038
md. B. R. Hargrove.	-	3309
F. Courtney U., b. ca 1794, d. before 1850	C124	1109
md. 1814 Cynthia Richardson.	-	1110
II. Nathan U. I	No	78
md. Mackey Johnson, b. -, d. 1831.	A41	79
A. Burtis U., b. 1781, d. 1845	B28	80
md. 1808 Margaret Yates, b. 1788, d. 1857.	B75	81

	Found in	
	<u>Mt. Pisgah Minutes</u>	<u>XID</u>
B. Hubbard U., b. 1800, d. 1859	No	83
md. 1822 Esther Byrd.	A42,B16	810
C. Acril U., b. 1805, d. 1860	B11	84
Acril U. was not a member but his female		
slave Nelley joined by experience on NOV 1836.		
D. Tabitha U., b. 1791.	B55	86
1. Martha Jane U., b. 1821	B135	757
md. 1855 Merrill Olive.	-	3277
E. Mackey U.	No	87
md. 9 AUG 1816 Edmond Cole.	B26	813

From the above outline it is clear that we have identified 34 Upchurch family members. It is disappointing to note that neither Moses U. nor Nathan U. I are found in the minutes but there can be little doubt that their wives Mary and Mackey were present among the originators. The minutes show that the femal members of the church substantially out numbered the male members. From the minutes we know that intemperance was considered a serious problem and it probably was from what we know of the general history of those days. No doubt the females had this problem as an incentive to cause them to support the church. Also, it can be visualized that the females looked forward to the church monthly meeting as a good opportunity to escape from the boredom on everyday life. The men no doubt took to "ardent spirits" as they were called for the same reason.

The way in which the church monitored the morals of the members makes fascinating reading. At each monthly meeting reports were received on just who had succumbed to strong drink, to lying or to sexual indiscretions. Committees were appointed to investigate and depending on the circumstances the accused was declared not to be guilty, was forgiven or was excommunicated. Sometimes the investigation extended over several months. Here are some examples of cases:

- One female accuses another of transgressing a gospel order.
- A brother accused by a sister of private trespass.
- One brother charged with threatening to kick another brother.
- Two sisters appointed to visit a sister on a charge of intemperance.
- A brother censured for willful lying.
- A sister taken notice of for talking and misconduct in many respects. She was excommunicated for circulating a falsehood.
- A sister taken notice of for the sin of violent passion and speaking great swearing words to the mortification of the whole church while in conference.
- A sister excommunicated for speaking bad of a brother.
- A sister excommunicated for contempt.
- A sister excommunicated for drinking and quarelling and for contempt of the church.
- A sister excommunicated for being exercised by a willful prejudicial spirit.
- One sister accused another of witchcraft.

One notable case involved Willie J. Fuller. He was intemperate from time to time but was repeatedly forgiven whereas others were not treated so leniently. It appears that his ability to write made him a highly valued member of the congregation. He was very active in the church and would stay away from strong drink for long periods but then fall off the wagon. Finally, he was excommunicated but then restored again. One can visualize that Willie was a likable character and able to talk his way out of scrapes. He witnessed many wills and deeds in the community and played a direct interactive role with Nathan U. I and his children.

While the church had its good points there is no doubt that it introduced much discord in the community. Surely, those who were ejected from the church had a bad feeling about their detractors. Perhaps, this explains why some family units tended to move on to greener pastures in those days. At this point in time we see little reason for being specific about which community members were given demerits. Perhaps the demerits were undeserved. All the same, the minutes do read like a modern day soap opera. You may want to check for yourself to see what role your great aunt Sally played.

The seven individuals whose names follow could not be linked to the Moses U. or Nathan U. I Clans.

	Found in <u>Mt. Pisgah Minutes</u>	<u>XID</u>
Eaton by experience NOV 1862, servant of John Upchurch	B11	
Eliza Upchurch on original 1821 list, hence joined before 1821. Dismissed by letter JAN 1840.	B63	
Elizabeth Upchurch on original 1821 list, hence joined before 1821. Dismissed by letter JAN 1840.	B73	
Emiler Upchurch.	B156	
Mary Upchurch. Admitted by experience AUG 1855.	B209	
Antilrer (Tieleen) Upchurch. Admitted by experience SEP 1855. Dismissed by letter OCT 1855.	B219	
Miley J. Upchurch.	C150	

Our comments on the above unlinked Upchurches are as follows:

John Upchurch was mostlikely John H. Upchurch, b. 1826, a son of Murray Upchurch and a gs of Moses Upchurch.	27
Eliza Upchurch and Elizabeth Upchurch may be closely related as they both requested a letter of dismissal in January 1840. One of these could be Elizabeth Goodwin, b. 1795 who md. 1811	12
Whitney Upchurch, a son of Moses Upchurch. Whether Whitney U. had a dau named Elizabeth who would have been old enough to join the church in 1821 is speculative. He could have had one as old as 9 years but young people generally did not join the church until 13-18 years of age. Another prospect is that one of these is the Elizabeth U. who md. Gilbert Upchurch in Wake Co., NC on 20 MAR 1819. This couple's identity is still uncertain.	11
Emiler Upchurch - spelling could be wrong.	
Mary Upchurch - possibly a gd of Moses Upchurch or Nathan Upchurch.	
Antilrer (Tieleen) Upchurch - spelling could be wrong.	
Miley J. Upchurch - no comment.	



XID  
25

The May 1861 minutes indicate that Isham Sims U. and several other male church members blocked the church door and would not let others enter. In a JUL 1861 meeting Isham and several others were excommunicated for their behavior. On 21 FEB 1984 your Editor visited Dilly (Upchurch) Kelly to ask why her gf Isham had blocked the church door. She said that the incident was known to the family and it had something to do with the coloured members of the church. Lacking specifics she directed me to the gravestone of James Beavers located one mile NE of Mt. Pisgah Baptist Church. James was one of those who blocked the door. Sure enough, the stone told the story. It indicated that James, who had died on the battlefield at Manassas in 1862, had been excommunicated because he stood up for fair treatment of the coloured members of the church. A sequel is that Isham wrote to the church from the battlefield in 1864 and expressed the need for church fellowship and asked to be forgiven and to be taken back into the church. He was accepted.

While list A has been reproduced above in its entirety lists B and C have been extracted where there was obvious or suspected connection to the Upchurch family. A closer examination of the records printed above and those not so presented will no doubt reveal members of the Upchurch family who were listed under a different name. Interested parties may examine the minutes at the Wake Forest Library or they are present in microfilm at the NC State Archives in Raleigh, NC (WL-79,A-6). Corrections or additions relative to our understanding of these valuable minutes will be appreciated.

Mt. Pisgah Baptist Church owes its beginnings in part to the Yates family who lived in Wake Co., NC about half-way between the Nathan U. I home at Green Level and the home of Moses U. about two miles west. Out of this Yates family came the famous Matthew Tyson Yates who became the first Baptist Missionary to serve in China. A small footnote in history is that Murray U. and his wife, Nancy (Scott) U. joined the Mt. Pisgah Church on 1 OCT 1836, the same date on which Matthew Tyson Yates joined. 14,15

The first reference to meetings of the Mt. Pisgah Church refer to use of "Yates Meeting House". It was referred to the Baptist Church at Yates Meeting House. A later note says "The Church set in conference at Mt. Pisgah." In AUG 1820 Bryan Harward was authorized to sell the old meeting house and to apply the proceeds to a new one. Your Editor speculates that the Yates family allowed use of land and buildings on their home property for the early years and that after about five years the church was moved to its present location.

All members of the Moses U. and Nathan U. I Clans trace a portion of their heritage back to the earliest days of the Mt. Pisgah Baptist Church in Chatham Co., NC. The minutes reveal that our ancestors played a strong role in helping to start and to maintain this church which continues in fine form even today. Of course, our family had some back-sliders in the church but no more than our fair share.



UB VOL 5, NO 2, P 49

APR 1984

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

The Upchurch reunion at Leroy Percy State Park near Hollandale, MS will take place starting at 10:00 A. M., on Saturday, June 16, 1984. This is the 7th annual session. Historically the event has embraced primarily descendants of Mark Wesley U. of the Moses U./Courtney 4345,1/1109 U. Subclan but it is beginning to be a general Upchurch gathering. From the announcement it appears that the project is becoming more organized with games, pictures, registration and as usual, lots of good food. The organizers this year are Genevieve Tharp Little and Mrs. Herbert Wayne U., Sr. Let's listen for a report of an outstandingly successful meeting.

We have recently been in contact with Raymond Clair U., Real Estate 2278 Broker in Raleigh, NC, and are proud to report that he continues to maintain the cemetery in western Wake Co., NC where his ggf, Isham Sims 25 U., is buried.

UB VOL 5, NO 2, P 57 - 71

APR 1984

INTRODUCTION AND OUTLINE OF THE RUFFIN U. SUBCLAN OF THE MOSES U. CLAN  
(CLAN 1)

Belle West in her Upchurch Family book reports "Ruffin Upchurch 836,9 (b. 1787) in Franklin Co., NC, m \_\_\_\_\_ Williams, 2nd Patsy Goodwin - 10 Affidavit of Ora (Upchurch) Lewter, who knew him personally. He is said to have had 22 children." Unfortunately, Mrs. West was not able to provide more about this son of Moses U., Head of Upchurch Clan No. 1. 1 We report here, for the first time, some semblance of organization of the life of Ruffin U. 9

By reading between the lines of documents and recalling off-hand comments of descendants and individuals who knew about Ruffin U. we have concluded he was a real character. The problem is we have not yet decided what kind of character he was. Some of the comments about him center on the fact that he had 22 children. Beyond this, we are left to wonder if his reputation as a "character" came from an enjoyment of alcoholic beverages, from possibly being lively at gatherings or possibly from giving special attention to the ladies. We have no documentary proof that his reported 22 children were not borne by his two wives but then we don't even know the names of all of the 22 offspring.

XID

Ruffin U. would have been about 17 years old when he moved with his father from Franklin Co., NC to the eastern edge of Chatham Co., NC in about 1804. We presume he was single at the time of the move. Sometime before 1810 he married Elizabeth Kelley but no record of the marriage at the time it took place has been found. We have not been able to substantiate the affidavit of Ora (Upchurch) Lewter that Ruffin U. was md. to a \_\_\_\_\_ Williams.

We speculate that Ruffin U., after his first marriage, continued to live on one of the parcels of land owned by his father in Chatham Co., NC. This arrangement became more binding when on 10 JAN 1824 Moses U. sold to his son Ruffin U. for 100 lbs. 150 acres of land in Chatham Co., NC on the waters of Pitts Creek (Book AAI/34). Ruffin U. appears on the Chatham Co., NC census as a head of a household in 1810, 1820, 1830 and 1840. In 1850 and 1860 he appears on the Wake Co., NC census and is presumed to have lived in the community around Olive Chapel Church and New Hill which is 5 or 6 miles south of where he and Moses U. originally lived on Pitts Creek in Chatham Co. Ala (Wilson) Yow, a gggd 3678 of Ruffin U. reports that he was buried in Wake Co., NC two miles south of Olive Chapel Church.

A substantial body of information about Ruffin U. comes from a packet of papers generated in 1878-1879 when his widow Martha (Goodwin) U. 10 applied for a pension. These pension papers are internally contradictory to some extent possibly because the papers were completed for Martha by others who may have been careless in their construction or possibly they were given different information at different times. Martha was not literate which complicated the matter. It is likely that all involved in the process were more interested in getting the pension for a deserving widow than they were in recording accurate information for genealogical purposes. Here is an abstract of the pension papers with commentary:

20 MAY 1878 Martha (Goodwin) Upchurch, age 66, widow of Ruffin U. applies for a pension based on Ruffin's service in the War of 1812. Application made through R. McAllister, Jr., a lawyer of Washington, DC. Details: Ruffin U. drafted 1 SEP 1814 for 6 mo. and served 5 mo. as Pvt. in Company of Capt. John Green in 1st NC Regt. Col. McDonnal commanding. Discharged Portsmouth, VA 8 FEB 1815. Martha Goodwin md. 16 MAR 1829 Ruffin U. by Alsey Goodwin, Magistrate, in Chatham Co., NC in home of Henry Goodwin. Elizabeth Kelley was the 1st wife of Ruffin U. He d. 14 MAR 1866 at home in Wake Co., NC, PO New Hill. Ruffin had earlier obtained a warrant for bounty land. Sworn testimony of Martha U. by her mark (X) witnessed by Engley Council & Calvin Goodwin. 10,9

8 JUL 1878 Department of Interior acknowledges receipt of application. File designation "Ruffin Upchurch - WC 27149 1812".

2 MAY 1879 Martha (Goodwin) Upchurch, age 65, widow of Ruffin U. reapplies for a pension based on Ruffin's service in the War of 1812, and declares her prior application of 20 MAY 1878 to be void. Executed by L. B. Seagroves, JP of Wake Co., NC. Details: Ruffin U. served in Company of Capt. Evans in Regt. of N. C. Militia commanded by

XID

Col. Cotton. Drafted in Pittsboro or Willmore, Chatham Co., NC SEP 1814 for the war and served about 6 mos. Discharged Norfolk, VA FEB or MAR 1815. At enlistment - age about 25, blue eyes, dark hair, fair complexion, 5' 8" high, weight 150-160 lbs. Martha md. Ruffin U. 15 MAR 1819 in Chatham Co., NC by Alsey Goodwin, JP and she has not remarried. Ruffin's 1st wife was Elizabeth Kelley, d. 1818. Martha and Ruffin lived in Chatham Co. 15 years and in Wake Co. 25 years. Her agent - M. C. Olive of Apex, NC. Her PO - Apex, Wake Co., NC.

2 MAY 1879 Dr. C. N. Roberson, MD, certifies that Martha U. is unable to appear in court to make her petition.

12 AUG 1879 John Scott, age 90 and J. J. Jenkins, age 80, both of PO Green Level, NC, appear before JP Peter Winsbegg (?) to testify that the 1st wife of Ruffin U. d. 1823, that Martha and Ruffin U. md. in MAR or APR 1828 by Alsey Goodwin, JP, and now deceased, that Martha has not remarried, and that John and J. J. lived near Martha and Ruffin for 60 - 70 yrs. and that Martha and Ruffin lived together until he died.

Undated Affidavit - Margaret Goodwin, age 66, of Chatham Co. and M. Laurence, age 64, of Wake Co., appeared before L. B. Seagroves, JP to testify that they heard the marriage ceremony of Ruffin and Martha on 18 MAR 1823 and that Ruffin d. 12 MAR 1866 and that Martha and Ruffin lived together from marriage until Ruffin died and that Martha has not remarried. PO for both testifiers - New Hill, Wake Co., NC.

Conflicting dates from the above are that:

Elizabeth (Kelley) U., 1st wife of Ruffin U. d. in 1818 or 1823.

Martha Goodwin md. Ruffin U. on:

16 MAR 1829  
or 15 MAR 1819  
or MAR or APR 1828  
or 18 MAR 1823.

Ruffin U. d. 14 or 18 or 12 MAR 1866.

It seems clear that Martha Goodwin was born about 1812 (confirmed by 1850 and 1860 census and by above petitions). Accordingly it seems that we may rule out the 1819 and 1823 marriage dates for her. This means she likely married Ruffin in 1828 or 1829. This means that the female of wife age on the 1810 and 1820 census with Ruffin U. must have been his first wife, Elizabeth (Kelley) U. and that she most likely died in 1823. Of course, there could have been another wife, common-law or otherwise in the period 1810-1830 but if so, the petitions extracted above are silent on the matter. At the time the petitions were submitted

XID

the 1810-1830 era was 50 - 70 years in the past. In 1878-79 few living souls would have personally remembered the events of 1810-1830, but some would have. Certainly word-of-mouth (gossip) would have brought all kinds of 1810-1830 happenings to the ears of those present in 1878-79. Until more facts can be gathered we may choose, as we please, from among the possibilities that:

The petitions are basically accurate except for incidental errors in memory that crept into the records.

That some facts are different, such as the presence of another wife in the 1810-1830 period, and that the petition participants did not know of such "other" facts or did know or suspect and elected to tell what seemed best at the time.

From the census records for Ruffin U. we obtain the following:

1810 - Chatham Co., NC.

Assumption

A. 1 M age 16-26	Ruffin U., b. 1787 - 23 in 1810	9
B. 1 F age 16-26	Elizabeth (Kelley) U.	7217
C. 1 M age under 10 1st son	Kelley U., b. ca 1806	

1820 - Chatham Co., NC.

A. 1 M age 26-44	Ruffin U., b. 1787 - 33 in 1820	9
B. 1 F age 26-44	Elizabeth (Kelley) U.	7217
C. 1 M age under 10 2nd son	Ruffin U., Jr., b. ca 1815	
D. 1 M age 10 - 15 1st son	Kelley U., b. ca 1806 - 14 in 1820	
E. 1 F age under 10 1st dau ?		
F. 1 F age under 10 2nd dau ?		
G. 1 F age under 10 3rd dau ?		

1830 - Chatham Co., NC

(Ruffin U. actually shown as Ruffin Church)

A. 1 M age 40-50	Ruffin U., b. 1787 - 43 in 1830	9
B. 1 M age 5 - 10 3rd son	William U., b. ca 1820, new since 1820 - by 1st or 2nd wife?	
C. 1 M age 20-30 1st son	Kelley U., b. ca 1806 - 24 in 1830	
D. 1 F age under 5 5th dau	New since 1820 - by 1st or 2nd wife?	
E. 1 F age under 10 4th dau	New since 1820 - by 1st or 2nd wife?	
F. 1 F age 10-15 3rd dau	(G in 1820)	
G. 1 F age 15-20 1st dau	(E in 1820)	
H. 1 F age 15-20 2nd dau	(F in 1820)	
I. 1 F age 15-20	Martha Goodwin U., b. 1812 - 18 in 1930 (New wife)	10



1840 - Chatham Co., NC.			<u>Assumption</u>	XID
A.	1 M age 50-60		Ruffin U., b. 1787 - 53 in 1840	9
B.	1 M age under 5	8th son	James Wesley U., b. ca 1839	2824
C.	1 M age under 5	7th son	Thomas U., b. ca 1834	3421
D.	1 M age 5 - 10	6th son	Orlando Jackson U., b. 26 DEC 1833	1034
E.	1 M age 5 - 10	5th son	Ruffus U., b. ca 1831	678
F.	1 M age 10-15	4th son	John U., b. ca 1826	3418
G.	1 F age under 5	6th dau	Catherine U., b. ca 1838	3423
H.	1 F age 10-15	5th dau		
I.	1 F age 15-20	4th dau		
J.	1 F age 20-30		Martha (Goodwin) U., b. 1812 - 28 in 1840	10
1850 - Wake Co., NC (Household 403, Family 403)				
A.	Ruffin U.	35 M	Ruffin U., b. 1787 - 63 in 1850	9
B.	Patsey U.	38 F	Martha (Goodwin) U., b. 1812 - 38 in 1850	10
C.	Rufus U.	19 M	Ruffus U., b. ca 1831	678
		5th son		
D.	Olander U.	18 M	Orlando Jackson U., b. 26 DEC 1833	1034
		6th son		
E.	Thomas U.	16 M	Thomas U., b. ca 1834	3421
		7th son		
F.	Catherine U.	12 F	Catherine U., b. ca 1838	3423
		6th dau		
G.	James U.	10 M	James Wesley U., b. ca 1839	2824
		8th son		
H.	Gushern U.	8 F?	Gaston U., b. ca 1842	2822
		9th son		
I.	Margaret U.	6 F	Margaret U., b. ca 1844	2114
		7th dau		
J.	B. F. U.	3 M	B. Franklin U., b. ca 1847	2821
		10th son		
K.	Anna U.	4 F	Anny (Anne) U., b. ca 1845	2819
		8th dau		
L.	Abba U.	6/12 F	Aby (Abby) U., b. ca 1851	2818
		9th dau		
	(plus 10th dau Eliza Jane U., b. ca 1853)			2820

Thus we have accounted roughly for 20 of the presumed 22 children of Ruffin U. There are tentative names for all of the 10 sons and for the youngest 5 of the 10 daughters. We presume son, William U., b. ca 1820 - 25, d. young or left the home prior to the 1840 census.

Ruffin U. was a small land holder all his life. We do not know how or why he disposed of the 150 acres he acquired from his father in 1824 but presumably he farmed it until he acquired new property in Wake Co., NC between 1840 and 1850. On the 1850 census he is shown with real estate valued at \$100. In 1860, presumably at the same location,



XID

he had real estate valued at \$825 and personal property valued at \$1155 at which time he was 74 years old. Only once was he shown to have owned a slave and this was in the 1830 census. The slave was age 10 - 24.

Other incidental notations relative to Ruffin U.:

The WILL of Ruffin U. was written 31 MAY 1858 and probated AUG 1866. Left all to his wife Martha U. Names some children. Refers to his home place where he now lives as the New River land.

On 23 AUG 1820 Ruffin U. was a bondsman when his brother Murray U. md. Nancy Scott. Ruffin signed with an X.

The ledger for an old county store near the residence of Moses U. for the period 1827-1829 shows purchases by Ruffin U. APR, MAY, SEP, OCT 1827 and FEB, MAR, APR 1828.

See UPCHURCH BULLETIN, Vol. 3, No. 2, Pg. 77, for speculation on the prospects of Kelley U. being the son of Ruffin U.

In some ways one could say we have a lot of information on Ruffin U. and in some ways one could say we don't have much. In any case, one hopes for more details in due course.

An outline of the Ruffin U. Subclan of the Moses U. Clan, to the extent that details are available is provided below through the 9th generation.

#### OUTLINE

- V. Ruffin U., b. 1787 (Franklin Co., NC), d. ca 1866 (Wake Co., NC) 9
- (Bur. Wake Co., NC), md. (1st) Elizabeth Kelley, b. , d. ca 1823 7217
- md. (2nd) Martha "Patsey" Goodwin, b. ca 1812. 10
- A. Kelley U., b. ca 1806
- B. Ruffin U., Jr. b. ca 1815
- C. William U., b. ca 1820.
- D. John U., b. 1826, d. 1892, md. Emmaline Goodwin. 3418, 3419
- 1. William Fulton U., b. 1 MAY 1862, d. 15 APR 1907, md. 3420
- Elizabeth Susan Merritt, b. 3 JAN 1868, d. 8 JUN 1952. 3675
- a. Inez U., b. 30 SEP 1906, d. 12 JAN 1907. 9345
- b. Infant U., b/d. 8 MAY 1895
- c. Lennie Polk U., b. 10 FEB 1892, d. 14 MAR 1936 (Bur. 3676
- Olive Chapel Church, Wake Co., NC), md. Charlie 3677
- Harvey Wilson, b. 5 OCT 1891, d. 9 MAY 1961 (Bur. as WIF).
- d. Stella U., md. (1st) Leonidus J. Mills, 9342, 9341
- b. 18 OCT 1872, d. 31 MAY 1947, md. (2nd) \_\_\_\_\_ Coward.
- e. Ethel U., md. (1st) \_\_\_\_\_ Broadhurst, 9346
- md. (2nd) Bill Langdon. 9347
- f. John U., md. Vara Ennis or Vara Gardner. 9349,-
- g. Pryor U., md. \_\_\_\_\_ Moore. 9350,-
- h. Barbee M. U., b. 26 DEC 1903, md. Lucy C. \_\_\_\_\_, 9351,-
- b. 22 MAY 1911, d. 30 SEP 1970 (Bur. Olive Chapel Ch., Wake Co., NC).

	XID
E. Ruffus U., b. ca 1831, d. 6 FEB 1882, md. (1st) 2 OCT 1859	678
(Wake Co., NC) Emily Hudson, md. (2nd) 27 DEC 1870	3205
Ann M. Luter.	3204
1. Christopher U., b. ca 1856, md. Anne L. Lewter.	3408,3409
a. Leonie J. U.	3410
b. Aidie F. U.	3411
c. Hettie U.	3412
2. Rufus Cary U., b. ca 1862, md. Dora Ann Kelly, b. 1852, d. 1948.	3413,3652
a. Carl Emil U., b. 7 SEP 1885, d. 1940, md. 14 OCT 1914	3653
Nancy Catherine Thomas, b. 19 OCT 1887, d. 1975.	5396
b. Argus U., md. Almira Edwards, b. 1890, d. 29 NOV 1980 (Lee Co., NC)(Bur. Lee Co., NC).	3660,3673
c. Rupert U., md. Helen Bell.	3667,3671
d. Rhondo U.	3668
e. Beatrice U., b. d. age 12-17 years.	5395
f. Kurley Ustrage U., md. Elizabeth Sulu Campbell.	3658,3672
3. Fidelia U.	3414
4. Effie U., md. 6 FEB 1890 J. L. Broughton (?).	3415,-
5. Albert G. U., md.	3416
a. Pauline U.	5400
b. dau	
c. dau	
d. dau	
6. Ester Ann U.	3417
F. Orlando Jackson U., b. 26 DEC 1833, d. 18 AUG 1906 (Bur.	1034
Olive Chapel Bap. Ch. Cem., Wake Co., NC), md. 21 DEC 1854 (Wake Co., NC) Sarah Ann Ragin, b. 3 JUL 1831, d. 6 FEB 1916 (Bur.	1035
same as HUS).	
1. Ortney Ann U., b. 1856, d.,md. Alfonso Wilson, b. 1857.	1036,1041
a. Enna Wilson, b. APR 1880	1042
b. Toy Wilson.	1043
2. Lourena "Rennie" U., b. 1858, md. Benton Wilson.	1037,1040
3. Louzenia Ann "Louzenie" U., b. 1858, md. Archibald Houston Bennett, b. 2 AUG 1890, d. 1930.	1038
a. Estelle Bennett, md. (1st) Jalma Mills, md. (2nd) James Crayton.	1039
b. Sidney Carlyle Bennett, b. 2 AUG 1890, d. 10 JAN 1935, md. 22 NOV 1895 Vara Haudie Mann, b. , d. 12 SEP 1938.	1044
4. Margaret Jackson U., b. 1865, d. 1920 (Bur. Mt. Pisgah Ch., Chatham Co., NC), md. James Dallas Yates, b. 28 DEC 1844, d. 18 NOV 1911 (Bur. same as WIF).	1055
a. Sarah Aline Yates, b. 23 NOV 1901, d. 28 NOV 1901 (Bur. same as MOT).	1045
b. Maggie Ruth Yates.	1075
c. Willo U. Yates, b. 27 AUG 1906, md. 16 SEP 1930 Richard White, b. 1 JUN 1908, d. 3 APR 1958.	1076
5. Zora A. U., b. 19 SEP 1872, md. John Seaton Welch, b. 7 AUG 1873, d. 31 DEC 1939.	1077
a. Zora Ruth Welch, b. 11 NOV 1905, md. Allie James Melton, b. 19 AUG 1903, d. 27 APR 1970.	1078
	1079
	1081,1082
	1083
	1084

	XID
G. Thomas U., b. ca 1834, md. 16 OCT 1855 (Wake Co., NC)	3421
Lydia Ann Olive, b. 15 FEB 1835, d. 2 JUN 1910 (Bur. Olive Chapel Ch., Wake Co., NC).	3422
1. Cornelia U., b. ca 1858.	8147
2. Mattie U., b. ca 1861.	8148
H. Catherine U., b. ca 1838, md. 16 OCT 1855 (Wake Co., NC)	3423
Alfred Lawrence.	3424
I. Wesley U., b. ca 1839, md. 6 OCT 1864 (Chatham Co., NC)	2824
Sarah Ann Goodwin, b. ca 1842	10532
1. Oscar T. U., b. ca 1865.	4120
2. Edgar U., b. ca 1867.	4121
3. John Manly U., b. 3 APR 1874(1878), d. 18 DEC 1948 (Bur. Marthas Chapel, Chatham Co., NC), md. 2nd cousin Alice Williams (dau of Lucettie U., gd of Sims U.).	4123
a. Lila U., md. Grady Marcom.	7497,9303
b. Leonard Leroy U.	7498
4. Wiley Alonza U., Sr., b. ca 1872, d. (Bur. Carrboro, Durham Co., NC), md. Beadie Ray.	4122
a. Mangum U., md. Margaret ____.	7500
b. Doris U.	7493
c. Bayman U., md. Edna Horton.	7494
d. Wiley Alonza U., Jr., md. Dorothy ____.	7495,7501
5. Arnie Wesley U., USN, b. 11 JUL 1880, d. 21 SEP 1950 (Bur. National Cem., Raleigh, NC), md. Blanch Laster Stedman.	7492
J. Gaston (Gushern) U., b. ca 1842.	7502
K. Margaret U., b. ca 1844, md. 22 JUL 1859 William C. Scott, (son of Ada U.), b. 1830.	2822
L. Anny U. (Anna)(Anne), b. 1845.	2114, 2115
M. B. Franklin U., b. ca 1847, md. Mary ____.	2819
1. Willis C. U., b. 1876.	2821
2. Elora U., b. 1879.	5652
3. Caley Godfrey U., b. 9 JUL 1884 (Chatham Co., NC).	5653
N. Aby (Abby)(Abba) U., b. ca 1851, md. John Jenkins.	3428
1. Letty Jenkins.	2818,3426
O. Eliza Jane U., b. ca 1853.	3427
P. Patsey U. ???	2820

## VI. OUTLINE OF SELECTED CLANS OR SUBCLANS

OUTLINE FOR SOME OF THE CHILDREN OF MOSES UPCHURCH,  
Head of Clan 1

XID  
1

We are on mid-ground in reporting on the details about Moses U. and his children. At the time Moses U. moved from Franklin Co., NC to Chatham Co., NC in about 1804 he already had 10 of his eventual flock of 11 children. As far as we can tell only one child developed lasting ties with the Franklin County NC community and that was his oldest child, a daughter, Leatha U., about whom more will be reported below. 1

Moses U. was b. in 1753 in Brunswick Co., VA and as an infant moved with his father, Richard U. II, to the Moccasin Creek area of North Carolina. In 1772 Moses U. married Mary Simms, presumably in Franklin Co., NC. That part of the Moccasin Creek area where Moses and Mary spent their early life was in Wake Co., NC but in 1787 their homesite became a part of Franklin Co., NC as a result of legislative action which redrew the boundary between Wake and Franklin Counties. 1  
152  
1,2

Leatha U., the first child of Moses and Mary was born in 1773 or 1774 and one presumes she was born in Franklin or Wake Co., NC. It is somewhat of a puzzle that there are no recorded children of Moses U. following the birth of Leatha U. until the birth of his son Gillium U. in 1782. While such an eight year gap is possible due to medical reasons, it seems more likely that they had one or more children born between 1774 and 1782 who died as infants and never appeared on the record. A study of the census records for Moses U. reveals one suggestion of such a child in that the 1800 census of Franklin Co., NC shows in the Moses U. household a female age 16-26 (hence b. 1774-1784) who is in excess of the number of children required to account for the eleven known children of Moses U. However, there is no room for such a child among the children listed for Moses U. on the 1790 census. It would appear that the 1800 census is incorrect in listing an extra child or that the 1790 census is in error in failing to list a child that did exist. Such errors are not rare. For example, Murray U., b. 1797, a son of Moses U., has a proper space on the 1800 and 1820 census records and beyond but in 1810 when he would have been age 13 there is no listing to accommodate him in the home of Moses U. 3  
1,3  
6  
1  
1  
1  
14  
1  
1



XID

For three of the children of Moses U. - Ruffin U., Whitney U., 1,9,11  
and Sims U. there have appeared outlines in previous issues of the 17  
UPCHURCH BULLETIN. Sometime in the future we will return to these  
three and provide an updated outline.

For Murray U. and Courtney U., we have substantial material 14,1109  
for outlines and will be publishing them in due course as time and  
space permits.

For the remaining children of Moses U. we provide what sketchy 1  
details are available for generations 6 - 9 below. Comments are made  
in the body of the outline under each of the 11 children as appropriate.

#### OUTLINE

- I. Leatha U., b. ca 1773 - 1774, md. 13 JAN 1807 (Franklin Co., 3  
NC) Hezekiah Massey. 4

COMMENTARY: It is interesting to note that this marriage took 1  
place in 1807 in Franklin Co., NC about three years after Moses U.  
moved his family from Franklin Co., NC to Chatham Co., NC. At the  
time of the move Leatha U., the oldest child of Moses, would have 3,1  
been about 21 years of age. It is reasonable to speculate that  
she had associations in the Franklin Co., NC community which enticed  
her to stay behind when her father moved. Alternatively, she could  
have made the move and then returned to Franklin Co., NC for the  
marriage. In any case, we note that Buckner U., her first cousin 69  
and son of Richard U. III, was a bondsman for her marriage. 63  
Whether the young married couple made their home in Franklin Co.,  
NC or in Chatham Co., NC or elsewhere we are yet to learn. We  
presume that the public records will yield this information and  
the names of their descendants, if any, in due course.

- II. Gillium U., b. 1782, d. 6 OCT 1854 (Wake Co., NC), md. 6  
Sarah \_\_\_\_\_, b. ca 1792. -  
A. Joseph U., b. ca 1827. 3066  
B. Mary E. U., b. ca 1830. 3067  
C. Carolina U., b. ca 1833. 3068  
D. Charles U., b. 1836. 3069  
E. A dau., b. 1820-1825. -  
F. A dau., b. 1820-1825. -  
G. Harriett U. (?). -  
H. Elizabeth U. (?), -  
md. John Williams (?). -

COMMENTARY: We are able to track Gillium U. through the 6  
census records until his death in 1854. From 1860 on we have been  
unable to locate his children on the NC census records. We are  
not knowingly in contact with any present-day descendants of this  
group. Possibly, they migrated out of the state and will appear  
elsewhere in due course.



- III. Mary U., b. 1785, md. 5 FEB 1806 (Wake Co., NC)  
Adam Bunn.

XID  
7  
8

COMMENTARY: We have one reference that this marriage took place in Franklin Co., NC and two references that it took place in Wake Co., NC. James Pace and William Hill were the witnesses. The Bunn's were prevalent in Franklin Co., NC so our guess is that Mary, like her sister Leatha, was too attached to the Franklin Co., NC scene to abide the move with her father to Chatham Co., NC. In due course perhaps the records will reveal more of this couple and their descendants, if any.

7  
3

- IV. Ruffin U., b. 1787 (Franklin Co., NC), d. 1866 (Wake Co., NC)  
(Bur. Wake Co., NC), md. (1st) Elizabeth Kelly, b., d. ca 1823;  
md. (2nd) Martha Goodwin, b. ca 1812, d. -. 9  
10

COMMENTARY: See UPCHURCH BULLETIN, Vol. 5 (1984), No. 2,  
pages 57-71 for a recent outline of this subclan.

- V. Parthenia U., b. 1788, md. \_\_\_\_\_ Smith. 5  
A. Upchurch Smith, b. ca 1803, md. Rachel \_\_\_\_\_, b. ca 1808. 8149  
1. John W. Smith, b. ca 1840. 8150  
2. Parthenia Smith, b. ca 1843, md. Thomas Henry Avera, 8151, 11882  
MD, b. 3 MAR 1832.  
a. Mary Avera, md. Moses Cameron Winston (BRO of 11883, 11885  
11886).  
b. Lizzie Avera, md. John Prescott Winston (BRO 11884, 11886  
of 11885).  
c. Died young.  
d. Died young.  
e. Died young.  
3. James E. Smith, b. ca 1847. 8152

COMMENTARY: Two chance encounters have brought us a scant outline of this subclan. Parthenia U. was almost lost in the records but when she named her son Upchurch Smith she created a flag that caught our attention in the records. Unfortunately, we have identified only the one child of hers. Probably there were more in central NC where we find this couple. The second revelation comes from an article by Thomas W. Broadfoot in the 1983 book entitled The Heritage of Wake County, North Carolina. He is a descendant of Dr. T. H. Avera who lived in the Eagle Rock Community of eastern Wake Co., NC. The story goes that T. H. Avera was working on his medical degree in the late 1854's at the University of Pennsylvania when he met a young girl, Bathenia Smith, while he was home on vacation. Later he married her and they lived for many years in the Hepzibah Baptist Church area of eastern NC. The correction we must make in this story is that the little girl was Parthenia Smith, granddaughter of Parthenia U., and not Barthenia Smith. We hope to learn more of this family in due course. Some of you will recognize Thomas W. Broadfoot as the operator of "Broadfoot's Bookmark" bookstore in Wendell, NC. We are proud to claim him as a cousin.

5

11882  
11882

- VI. Whitney U., b. 1793 (Franklin Co., NC), d. 1863, md. 3 JAN 1811 (Wake Co., NC) Elizabeth Goodwin, b. ca 1795 (Wake Co., NC). XID  
11  
12

COMMENTARY: See UPCHURCH BULLETIN, Vol. 1 (1980), No. 4, pages 135-139 for an outline of this subclan.

- VII. Courtney U., b. ca 1794, d. before 1850, md. 21 APR 1814 Cynthia Richardson, b. ca 1785, d. after 1870. 1109  
1110

COMMENTARY: At present we have a modest outline of this subclan but it is being improved rapidly. Our cousin Fran Lomas has provided an outstanding batch of data on Cynthia U., the daughter of Courtney U. and this helps greatly to round out our data on Courtney U. In addition our cousin Genevieve Little has just published her book on the Mississippi Upchurches which contains much information on her ancestor Mark Wesley U., a grandson of Courtney U. Courtney U. moved his family to Dallas Co., AL about 1835 so it is in the southern tier of states that we will expect to find the bulk of this subclan. Current signals are that we will have a very good outline on this subclan for publication in the UB in due course. 1116  
1109  
4345  
1109

- VIII. Calorgy U., b. 1795 (Franklin Co., NC), d. after 1870. 13

COMMENTARY: Calorgy U. never married. She may be found in the census records in the home of Moses U. up until 1840. In 1850 and 1860 she appears in Chatham Co., NC in the home of her brother, Sims U. In 1870 at age 75 she appears in the home of Parthenia (Upchurch) Yates, a daughter of Sims U. That is the last record we have of her. 13  
1

- IX. Murray U., b. 1 NOV 1797 (Franklin Co., NC), d. 19 FEB 1872, md. (1st) 23 AUG 1820 (Wake Co., NC) Nancy Scott, b. 29 NOV 1801, d. 26 JUL 1864; md. (2nd) Nancy E. (Carson) Dodd, b. ca 1834, d. 1869, md. (3rd) Sallie Temples. 14  
15  
4111  
4112

COMMENTARY: Belle West in her UPCHURCH FAMILY treated the Moses U./Murray U. Subclan in considerable detail and the reader is referred to that treatise for more information. However, Belle gave more emphasis to Isham Sims U., a son of Murray U. and her direct ancestor, than she did to the other children of Murray U. We have been accumulating details on the other children of Murray and will publish an overall outline for him in the UB in due course. 1/14  
14  
14

- X. Clegg U., b. 1800 (Chatham Co., NC). 16

COMMENTARY: The only detail we have on this individual appears on page 34 of Belle West's UPCHURCH STORY - "CLEGG UPCHURCH (b. 1800) Chatham Co., NC. - named in statement of descendant of SIMS UPCHURCH dated 29 OCT 1958". We doubt that Clegg U. was born in Chatham Co., NC as our best indication is that his father did

not move to Chatham Co., NC until about four years after this date. If Clegg U. was b. in 1800 it was after the 1800 census was taken since there is no spot on the 1800 census in the home of Moses U. for a child b. 1800. Also, it is presumed that Clegg U. d. before 1810 as there is no spot on the 1810 census in the home of Moses U. for a child b. 1800. XID  
1

XI. Sims U., b. 11 DEC 1808, d. 1880, md. (1st) 11 DEC 1832 17  
 (Wake Co., NC) Abigail Olive, b. 1810, d. 1847 (killed by 18  
 lightning); md. (2nd) (Chatham Co., NC) Matilda Temples; md. 19  
 (3rd) 23 DEC 1852 (Chatham Co., NC) Tabitha Williams. 20

COMMENTARY: See UPCHURCH BULLETIN, Vol. 4 (1983), No. 3, //  
 pages 93-101 for an outline of this subclan.

A. DEED WHEREBY JOEL COOK SELLS LAND TO MOSES UPCHURCH IN CHATHAM CO., NC. (Sold 25 JUL 1803, Recorded Deed Book M, Page 492).

XID  
1

This Indenture made this twenty fifth Day of July in the year of our Lord one thousand Eight hundred and three between Joel Cook of Chatham County and State of North Carolina of the one part and Moses Upchurch of the County of Franklin and the state aforesaid of the other part witnesseth That the said Joel Cook for and in consideration of the sum of Four Hundred pounds currency to him in hand paid at or before the signing and Delivering hereof the receipt whereof he doth hereby Acknowledge himself fully satisfied hath given granted bargained Sold and confirmed unto the said Moses Upchurch his heirs and assigns forever a Tract of land containing five hundred and fifty five acres beginning in Joseph Taylors line at a stake to be hereafter set up and running due west along a line that has been partly run between John Pitts and Joseph Pitts to a white oak on the west side of Pittses Creek formerly Expected to be the dividing line then running straight to a pine on the west side of the road from Fayetteville to the University supposed to be another Dividing line run by Joseph Pitts then running due west to a corner Stake to be hereafter set up in John Pitts Senior old line then running North to a stake Persons Corner then running East along Persons line to the county line then running near a south course along the county line to a corner then running west to a stake then running south to a pine then west to a pine Taylor's corner then south to the first Station to have and to hold the said land and premises with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging to the said Moses Upchurch his heirs (Extr. Adm.) and assigns forever and that the said Joel Cook doth for himself his heirs Extr. Adm. and assigns doth warrent and defend the saile of the said land and premises against the lawfull claim of all persons in witness whereof the said Joel Cook doth hereunto set his hand and fixed his seal the day and year first above written.

Signed, Sealed & Delivered  
in the presents off.

Joel Cook (Seal)

Test. R. Norris  
Nathan (X) Upchurch  
(his mark)

78

Chatham County February Sessions 1805. The Execution of this Deed was duly proved in open court by the oath of Nathan Upchurch a subscribing witness and ordered to be Registered.

XID

78

Test.

Thos Ragland cc.



B. COMMENTARY ON THE 1803 LAND PURCHASE BY MOSES UPCHURCH.

1

This deed formally documents a major move of the Heads of two Upchurch Clans. Moses U., the Head of Clan 1 is residing in Franklin Co., NC at the time of the purchase. At that time he was 50 years old and had grown children. We presume he occupied the Chatham Co. land promptly after he bought it. We have proceeded under the assumption that his entire family moved with him - certainly all of the boys did. There is a hint that one or two of the girls may have either stayed behind or at least acquired husbands from the Franklin Co. area. One late in life child, Sims U. was b. in 1808 after the move to Chatham. Moses appears to have paid cash for his Chatham purchase which was facilitated by a sale of his land in Franklin Co. Subsequently, Moses bought more land in Chatham. His estate had no doubt been increased by hard labor making tillable land out of the wilderness.

1

17

We know the location of the tract of land purchased within a mile or less but the exact boundaries have not been established in terms of present day land holdings. The facts in the deed and other related information should allow the exact establishment of the Moses U. Plantation in Chatham Co., NC. We know that it had the Wake-Chatham line as one boundary and that it was a couple of miles more or less due west of present day Green Level in Wake Co. where Nathan U. I had his Plantation. As a first approximation we suggest that the land was bounded on the east by the county line, on the west by present day NC Highway 751 ("the road from Fayetteville to the University") and that it was bisected by Road 1742 which crosses Pitts Creek.

1

78

The fact that Nathan U. I, a brother of Moses U. and the GGGF of your Editor, signed the 1803 Chatham Co. deed is evidence that the two brothers were in tune with each others move from the Moccasin Creek Area of NC to the Wake-Chatham border. It appears that the original deeds showing the purchase of land by Nathan U. I in the Green Level Area have been lost. One can speculate that Nathan U. I made his move before Moses and that Nathan alerted his brother to the prospects of a better life on the Wake-Chatham border and was there to witness a deed when Moses made his decision to take action. On the other hand, it could be that Moses and Nathan were together looking over the countryside for new lands and that Moses was the first to find a suitable spot. Under this scenario Nathan was simply "on hand" and a convenient witness to the deed. In any case, the two brothers both moved their families to the Wake-Chatham border in the very early years of the 1800s.

78,1

78



A. "A ROUND ABOUT".

XID

The search for family history is full of what you might call "round abouts". This means that you learn a lot of things in a round about way as we say. Here is an example. Our cousin Lebeus Eugene U. of Charleston, SC noted the name of a business owned by an Upchurch in Walterboro, SC. Lebeus sent your editor an address and he dispatched a letter of inquiry. A response came back from Mrs. Cary Ernest Upchurch, Jr. (nee: Joe Anne Joyner) that they were indeed very much interested. She placed an order for the UB for her family and for Cary's sister, Mrs. Gene Worth Todd (nee: Nannette Upchurch) of Scotland Neck, NC. In my correspondence I mentioned that in the period 1957-1965 I used to stop at a restaurant in Scotland Neck, NC because of their outstanding sweetpotato pie. Nannette responded in part in her letter of October 28, 1984 ..... "I have especially enjoyed reading your letter. Our father, Cary, Sr. died when we were quite young and we lost contact with that part of our life. I did not even know my grandfather's name until I read it in your letter. It is very exciting learning about your roots when you know so little." And, "I also agree with you that that little restaurant on Main Street in Scotland Neck - The Idle Hour - does have the best sweetpotato pie but you haven't lived until you have eaten their apple dumplings."

Such are the joys of genealogy!

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

It is with great sorrow that we report the death of Mrs. Hollie Olive Kelly, Sr., nee: Adelia Jane Upchurch on 29 APR 1985. She was age 91. Services were at the Olive Chapel Baptist Church in Wake Co., NC and burial was beside her husband in the church cemetery. Dilly Kelly had the most phenomenal memory that I have ever encountered. She shared her knowledge and interest of family history freely and was truly a joy to know. Generations of Upchurches and neighbors have benefitted from her astounding collection of knowledge. She was a true southern lady. We shall miss her cheerful contributions. She was the gd. of Isham Sims Upchurch and the gggd. of Moses Upchurch, Head of Clan 1. 25,1 638

By the time this issue of the UB reaches readers the 8th Annual Upchurch Family Reunion of MS will have been held. The event was planned for 15 JUN 1985 in Leroy Percy State Park near Hollandale, MS. The event started to serve the descendants of Mark Wesley Upchurch, a gs of Courtney Upchurch, Head of the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan.1109,1/1109 4345 However, all Upchurch and Upchurch descendants are welcomed. We will await news of the event. Mrs. Randall K. Little is the contact 10340 for the gathering.

The front page of the AARP News Bulletin for MAY 1985 showed a picture of our cousin Fred Jarrett Broadwell. The AARP Bulletin is a national newspaper for the American Association of Retired People. Fred was 100 years old last 8 NOV 1984. He is the oldest member of a baseball club for elderly people in St. Petersburg, FL. He is a retired salesman from NC and has been a member of the Club for 21 years. He is a gs of Isham Sims Upchurch. 2122 25

Now let us report a peculiar set of circumstances leading to the exciting proposal that one Hanson Upchurch was one of the sons of Ruffin Upchurch, Head of the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan, by his first 9,1/9 wife. On February 28, 1985 while in Raleigh, NC your Editor visited the Headquarters of the Wake Co., NC Library System to learn about their policy on accepting libraries of individuals (that is a whole other story). In the process I was introduced to a Mrs. Upchurch nee: Gardner. She shared some information about her late husband and caused me to become acquainted with the former Virginia Mae Upchurch of Garner, NC. I visited in Virginia's home on 1 MAR 1985 and found her a delightful person. She is a descendant of Hanson U. and has the family Bible in which many details are recorded about Hanson and his descendants. Hanson U. was b. 25 MAY 1814, and d. 3 SEP 1890 according to the Bible record. No indication is given as to the father of Hanson U., but from a careful study of the various records we conclude that he was the son of Ruffin U. by his first wife. Any evidence to the contrary or in confirmation will be appreciated before we commence assigning XID numbers to the members of this family. We 9

XID

find Hanson U. on the 1840 census with a wife and two small children and on the census for Johnston Co., NC in 1850 and 1880.

UB VOL 6, NO 4, P 135

OCT 1985

XID

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

1

Readers will have noted from the current and past issue of the UB that many XID numbers are being assigned to the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. This is based on the fine work of Genevieve (Tharp) Little who continues to publish her MORE OF THOSE MISSISSIPPI UPCHURCH'S. She is now collecting poetry written by Upchurches with a view towards publishing a volume of same in 1986. An invitation for submissions appears elsewhere in this issue of UB. We also have a nice packet on the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan from Mrs. Charles N. Prothro which begs to be processed.

1

1109

1/1109

11592

We want to give special thanks to M/M Clyde Charles Upchurch, Jr. of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan who have been especially supportive of the UB.

3088/5599

1/11

UB VOL 7, NO 2, P 47

APR 1986

XID

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

1

The 9th Annual Mississippi Upchurch Family Reunion will be held Saturday, 21 JUN 1986 at the Leroy Percy State Park near Hollandale, MS. Contact is Mrs. Randall Little in Vicksburg, MS - phone 638-6564. All Upchurches are invited but we are grateful to the members of the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan who have sustained this event.

10340

1/1109

INTRODUCTION AND OUTLINE OF THE COURTNEY UPCHURCH SUBCLAN OF THE MOSES UPCHURCH CLAN (CLAN NO. 1)	1109 1
Courtney U. was b. ca 1794 in the Moccasin Creek Area of Franklin Co., NC, in the midst of numerous descendants of his grandfather Richard U. II, who settled in the area about 40 years earlier.	1109 152
Courtney was one of the younger children in his family. About 1802 when he was less than ten years old, Courtney U. moved with his parents and all of his brothers and sisters to the eastern edge of Chatham Co., NC.	1109 1109
There he grew to manhood with his siblings and his first cousins who were children of his Uncle Nathan U. I. Nathan U. I, the Editor's gggf, lived just across the county line at Green Level, Wake Co., NC.	78
When Courtney U. was quite young on 3 JAN 1811 he was a bondsman for the marriage of his brother Whitney U. to Elizabeth Goodwin in Chatham Co., NC.	1109 11,12
Courtney U. md. on 21 APR 1814 in Chatham Co., NC, as a very young man. We estimate that he was about 20 years old at marriage and at most he would have been 24 since he was not shown in his father's household on the 1790 census and thus must have been born after 1790.	1109
Courtney U. md. Cynthia Richardson, dau of Capt. John Richardson.	1109,1110
We presume that Courtney U. was a farmer since that was the predominant occupation of the times, of his relatives and the area in which he lived. He paid taxes on 200 acres of land in 1815. We need to learn the exact location of this farm. The N. C. Archives has a microfilm of an old ledger book for a country store in the community where Courtney U. lived.	1109
The store was run by an Upchurch. The ledger includes entries for numerous buyers, presumably because they were buying on credit. Entries for Courtney U. are found in the ledger in APR, MAY, JUN, JUL, SEP, OCT 1827, and in JAN, FEB and APR 1828.	1109
We find Courtney U. as head of a household on the 1820 census of Chatham Co., NC. There were 6 people involved including Courtney and his wife, one male slave (age 14-25), one son, presumably Lawrence U., and two dau under age 10, names unknown.	1109 13160
On the 1830 census of Chatham Co., NC, Courtney is found as head of a household of ten people and no slaves. We are left to speculate whether the absence of slaves is due to reduced circumstances, a conviction against such holdings, or an intent to rely on his growing family labor supply. To the two dau on the 1820 census we add a third in 1830 but the names of all are still unknow to us. Of the five sons shown in 1830, we know about Lawrence U., b. ca 1817, Moses U., b.	1109 13160,1111
ca 1822, and Calvin Burnett U., b. ca 1829. We know of a fourth son who is presumed to be James Courtney U. but whether he is one of the five sons on the 1830 census is still uncertain.	XID 1113 1117



Courtney U. had a nephew named Courtney U. who was the son of 1109,633  
Sims U. However, the nephew was not born until ca 1846 and the 17  
two Courtney's never lived at the same time and place so there is no  
reason to confuse the two.

To the best of our knowledge, Courtney U. moved his entire 1109  
family to Dallas Co., AL between 1834 and 1836. Not long after that  
Courtney U. died. We know that he died before 1840 because in that  
year his wife is listed as head of the household and it is located  
in Perry Co., AL. Apparently the family moved to Perry Co., AL,  
from Marengo Co., AL, after Courtney U. died. His probate records 1109  
are shown in Marengo Co., AL. The Administrator of the estate  
of Courtney U. was Presley Woodhall. Issues associated with the estate  
were continued in the courts into the early 1840's. It appears that  
the estate was meager and that there were claims against it. It appears  
never to have been fully settled. It would seem that Courtney U. went 1109  
to Alabama to improve his worldly holdings but that the grim reaper  
came for him before he could make much progress. Courtney U. would 1109  
have been about 45 years old when he died. Life must have been hard  
for Courtney U. and his family. 1109

For the last several years we have been making excellent progress  
on accumulating records for three of the ten children of Courtney U. 1109  
The three are Lawrence, Moses and Cynthia. For this we are 13160,1111,1116  
especially indebted to a number of subclan members including  
especially the following:

Margie Dale (Upchurch) Lindau	7133
Genevieve Ellen (Tharp) Little	10340
Mary Frances (Wylie) Lomas	12204
Lois Elizabeth (Perkins) Prothro	11592
John Oakley Upchurch	13178

Of course much remains to be done and we will welcome continued  
and new inputs. An outline for Courtney U., his children, gc and 1109  
ggc follows. They are 6th, 7th, 8th and 9th generation descendants  
of Michael U. I, the original immigrant. We have on hand outlines 146  
for descendants of 55 of the 9th generation members of the Moses U./  
Courtney U. Subclan. 1/ 1109

#### OUTLINE

- VII. Courtney U., b. ca 1794, d. before 1840 (Marengo Co., AL)(Moved 1109  
Chatham Co., NC - Dallas Co., AL, ca 1835), md. 21 APR 1814  
Cynthia Richardson, b. ca 1785, d. after 1870. 1110  
A. Lawrence U., b. 1815-1820 (Chatham Co., NC), md. ca 1849 13160  
(AL) Mary \_\_\_\_\_.  
1. Francis A. U., b. ca 1849 (Dallas Co., AL), p. d. young.  
2. David Lawrence U. (Dave), b. 10 MAY 1851 (MS or LA), 13162  
d. 1926 (Bur. Winston Co., MS), md. 6 FEB 1883 (8 MAY 1881)



		XID
	(Warren Co., MS) Elvira "Ellen" Elizabeth Beville,	13203
	b. 2 MAR 1859, d. 16 APR 1950 (Bur. as HUS).	
	a. Unknown male U., b. -, d. young.	
	b. Charles U. (Twin), b. -, d. age 2 yrs. from fire.	13163
	c. Arthur U. (Twin), b. -, d. age 2 yrs. from fire.	13164
	d. Minnie A. U., b. MAY 1884, md. 25 DEC 1904 (Winston Co., MS) Willie Lindsey.	13165
	e. Frances Octavia U., b. AUG 1889, d. 1916, md. ca 1906 Floyd Freshour.	13166
	f. Robert Henry U., b. 8 JUN 1892 (Oktribbeha Co., MS), d. 21 DEC 1968 (Louisville, MS)(Bur. Winston Co., MS), md. (1st) 29 OCT 1913 (Clay Co., MS) Fannie Hodnett, b. -, d. JAN 1925 (Bur. Clay Co., MS), md. (2nd) 5 JUL 1925 (Winston Co., MS) Lena Maude Fulcher, b. 27 MAR 1901 (Winston Co., MS).	13167
	g. Somer Sylvester U., WWI, b. 25 SEP 1895, d. 23 JUN 1965 (Bur. Louisville, MS), md. 13 AUG 1922 (Winston Co., MS) Margaret Webster.	13428
	3. Gussie U., md. _____ Burton.	13201
	4. Frances Tavi U., md. Smith or Eubanks.	13168
B.	Dau., b. 1815-1820.	13169
C.	Dau., b. 1815-1820.	13170
D.	Moses U., CSA, b. ca 1822 (Chatham Co., NC) (Bur. Winston Co., MS), md. 28 NOV 1850 (Perry Co., AL) Emily Wilson, b. ca 1834 (NC or AL).	1111
	1. Mark Wesley U., b. 1 SEP 1851 (AL), d. 21 NOV 1901 (Sturgis, MS), md. (1st) 23(28) JAN 1870 (Oktribbeha Co., MS) Betsy Ann Langford 1/, b. 12 OCT 1855, md. (2nd) 23 DEC 1879 (Oktribbeha Co., MS) Martha A. McKay, b. ca 1847 (AL), md. (3rd) 3 OCT 1886 (Oktribbeha Co., MS) Joseph Martha Edmonia Hughes 2/, b. 22 JUN 1862 d. 20 MAR 1911 (Bur. Oktibbeha Co., MS).	4345
	a. 1/ William Harrison U., Sr., b. 17(11) NOV 1870(1871) (Oktribbeha Co., MS), d. 28 JUN 1948 (Bur. Sunflower Co., MS), md. (1st) 13 JAN 1892 (Holmes Co., MS) Alice Elizabeth Pinkston, md. (2nd) ca 1911 (Sunflower Co., MS) Lillie Groves.	5115
	b. 1/ Lucinda U., b. 26 DEC 1873 (MS), d. 28 JUN 1916, md. _____ Adams.	5116
	c. 1/ Delanie U., b. 4 AUG 1876 (MS), d. 7 JUL 1913, md. Joe Wells.	5517
	d. 2/ Bertie Elvira U., b. 27 AUG 1888 (Sturgis, MS), d. 27 FEB 1948 (Inverness, MS)(Bur. Inverness, MS), md. 27 JUN 1909 (Oktribbeha Co., MS) James Harvey Tucker, b. 28 SEP 1884 (Artesia, MS), d. 21 DEC 1948 (Inverness, MS)(Bur. as WIF).	7118
	e. 2/ Frederick Sylvester U., b. 17 APR 1890, d. 5 MAR 1924. Never married.	10813
	f. 2/ Ellen Airmanta U., b. 27 JUL 1892 (Oktribbeha Co., MS), d. 4 AUG 1954 (B'ham, AL)(Bur. Bradley, MS), md. 1 JAN 1914 James Allen Patterson, b. 13 JAN 1884 (or 1886)(Oktribbeha Co., MS), d. 28 SEP 1951 (Bradley, MS)(Bur. as WIF).	10283
		7119
		7120
		10299
		7121
		10303
		7122
		7123
		10308

		XID
	g. <u>2/</u> Wesley Ira U., b. 1 MAR 1894 (Sturgis, MS), d. 21 MAY 1968 (Greenville, MS)(Bur. Moorhead, MS), md. 25 NOV 1913 (Louisville, MS) Virgie Lee Green, b. 3 SEP 1898 (Sturgis, MS), d. 17 MAR 1978 (Bur. as HUS).	7124 7128
	h. <u>2/</u> Renna Lee U., b. 10 JUN 1896.	7125
	i. <u>2/</u> Rosalie May U., b. 17 AUG 1898, d. 12 FEB 1901.	7126
	j. <u>2/</u> Troy Calvin U., b. 22 MAR 1901, d. MAR 1910.	7127
2.	John Thomas U., b. 19 AUG 1854 (AL), d. 14 NOV 1926 (Louisville, MS)(Bur. Betheden, MS), md. (1st) 6 JUL 1872 (Oktibbeha Co., MS) Malissa Ann Langford <u>1/</u> , b. 2 MAY 1850, d. 7 JUL 1878 (Bur. Starkville, MS), md. (2nd) 14 NOV 1882 (Oktibbeha Co., MS) Mary Alice Richardson <u>2/</u> , b. 26 NOV 1854, d. 1889-1896 (Bur. Starkville, MS), md. (3rd) 26 NOV 1896 Martha Young (Turnipseed) Gladney <u>3/</u> , b. 2 JUL 1857, d. 5 JUL 1937 (Louisville, MS)(Bur. Betheden, MS).	4346 14183 14184 14185
	a. <u>1/</u> John Wesley U., b. 25 JUL 1874, d. 25 NOV 1878.	14186
	b. <u>1/</u> Leo Nora U., b. 16 AUG 1876 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. ca 1943, md. 18 DEC 1895 (Winston Co., MS) David William Kinard.	14187 14195
	c. <u>2/</u> Robert Lee U., b. 16 JUN 1884, d. 10 SEP 1955 (Starkville, MS)(Bur. Betheden, MS), md. 12 DEC 1906 (Louisville, MS) Allie Viola Hamill, b. 6 OCT 1885 (Winston Co., MS), d. 12 DEC 1957 (Starkville, MS) (Bur. as HUS).	14188 14196
	d. <u>2/</u> Maggie Belle U., b. 24 NOV 1886, d. 11 OCT 1888.	14189
	e. <u>2/</u> Mary Jane U., b. 22 SEP 1889, d. APR 1976, md. 2 FEB 1913 (Winston Co., MS) Silas Muldrew Massey.	14190 14200
	f. <u>3/</u> Benjamin Franklin U., b. 17 SEP 1897 (Winston Co., MS), d. 7 AUG 1960 (Bur. Betheden, MS), md 24 NOV 1918 (Winston Co., MS) Sally Myrtis Gazaway.	14191 14197
	g. <u>3/</u> Dan U., b. 17 SEP 1897 (Winston Co., MS), d. 7 NOV 1897 (Bur. Betheden, MS).	14192
	h. <u>3/</u> Myrtis Marie U., b. 21 OCT 1901 (Winston Co., MS), d. 31 DEC 1978 (Starkville, MS)(Bur. Betheden, MS), md. 24 DEC 1922 (Winston Co., MS) Willie Lee Cook, b. SEP 1902 (Winston Co., MS), d. 1 MAR 1941 (Spartenburg, SC)(Bur as WIF).	14193 14198
	i. <u>3/</u> Spivey Wesley U., b. 7 OCT 1905 (Betheden, MS), d. 16 APR 1964 (Macon, MS)(Bur. Macon, MS), md OCT 1924 Lois Jackson Sanders, b. 24 FEB 1909 (Mashulaville, MS).	14194 14199
3.	Robert Albron U., b. 11 AUG 1856 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 24 FEB 1924 (Longview, MS)(Bur. Bradley, MS), md. 11 DEC 1879 Eliza Jane Richardson, b. 31 JUL 1859, d. 11 DEC 1916 (Bur. Bradley, MS).	4347 13940
	a. Amos Oliver U., b. 12 FEB 1881, d. 19 AUG 1903 (Bur. Bradley, MS).	14902
	b. James Henry U., b. 23 JUL 1883 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 23 JAN 1936 (Bur. Bradley, MS), md. 21 JUL 1906 (Oktibbeha Co., MS) Susie A. Glenn, b. 9(19) AUG 1886, d. 2 MAR 1927 (Bur. as HUS).	14903 14907

		XID
c.	Robert Wirt U., b. 3 AUG 1886 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 19 APR 1973 (Bur. Starkville, MS), md. Rubie Viola Bruce, b. 10(11) FEB 1892 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 16 DEC 1939 (Bur. as HUS).	14904 14908
d.	Edward Irl U., b. 21 JAN 1889 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 1934, md. Mildred Crowe.	14905 14909
e.	Gordon Albertine U., b. 7 SEP 1893, d. 22 SEP 1949 (Chicago, IL)(Bur. Starkville, MS), md. 28 DEC 1923 (Kosciusko, MS) Loree Massey, b. 30 JAN 1906 (Attala Co., MS).	14906 14910
4.	William Calvin U., b. 11 AUG 1856, d. 2 NOV 1932 (Bur. Winston Co., MS), md. 15(16) APR 1881 (Winston Co., MS) Robert Lee Dawkins, b. 7 FEB 1865, d. 12 JAN 1949.	4348 14943
a.	Irene U., b. 12 FEB 1883, d. 5 APR 1968, md. 22 FEB 1906 M. Warren Jackson, b. -, d. 2 AUG 1917.	14940
b.	Joseph P. U., b. 12 MAY 1885, d. 9 JUN 1961. Never married.	14937
c.	Mary E. U., b. 25 AUG 1888, d. 31 OCT 1967, md. Charles H. Brown, b. -, d. 10 MAR 1949.	14938
d.	Erskin Roy U., b. 28 APR 1892, d. 11 OCT 1948 (Bur. Winston Co., MS), md. 29(30) SEP 1913 Lula Robinson.	14939 14942
5.	Monroe Franklin U., b. ca 1859 (MS).	4349
6.	Troy McDonald U., b. 28 JAN 1862 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 19 AUG 1941 (Bur. Lowndes Co., MS), md. 14 DEC 1882 (Lowndes Co., MS) Josephine Brazeale, b. 17 JAN (Pickens Co., AL), d. 17 JAN 1942 (Bur. as HUS).	4350 15327
a.	Eula Rose U., b. 23 NOV 1883 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 23 FEB 1954 (Lowndes Co., MS)(Bur. Columbus, MS), md. Luther Franklin Sanders, b. 25 APR 1880 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), d. 25 OCT 1958 (Oktibbeha Co., MS)(Bur. as WIF).	15328 15333
b.	Fennie U., b. 23 JUL 1885, d. 25 NOV 1957 (Bur. Lowndes Co., MS), md. 9(29) NOV 1911 Daisy Byron McCann, b. 6 JUN 1887, d. 28 DEC 1973 (Bur. as HUS).	15329 15334
c.	Effie Jane U., b. 10 JUN 1887 (Lowndes Co., MS), md. 23 MAY 1909 Archie Thomas McIlwain, b. 27 JAN 1883 (Panola Co., MS), d. 20 MAR 1968 (Bur. Artesia, Lowndes Co., MS).	15330 15335
d.	Belle U., b. 19 NOV 1889 (Columbus, MS), md. Ernest Moorhead.	15331 15336
e.	Donald Mack U., b. 19 FEB 1890 (Lowndes Co., MS), d. 6 NOV 1953 (Vicksburg, MS)(Bur. Humphreys Co., MS), md. 20 DEC 1914 (Lowndes Co., MS) Martha Angeline Hodges, b. 26 DEC 1893 (Columbus, MS).	15332 15337
7.	Peter J. U., b. ca 1867 (MS).	4351
8.	Walter Lane U., b. APR 1869 (Oktibbeha Co., MS), md. (1st) 31 OCT 1891 (Holmes Co., MS) Tullia Annie Marshall, b. JUN 1870 (MS), d. 1900-1910, md. (2nd) 14 NOV 1911 (Holmes Co., MS) May Lucile Siddon, b. 24 NOV 1878, d. 8 JUN 1960 (IA)(Bur. Spring Hill Cem.).	4352 15338 15339
a.	Ozzie Clinton U., b. AUG 1893 (MS), d. 1973 (Bur. Belzoni, Humphreys Co., MS), md. Esmer Madden, b. -, d. 1967 (Bur. Belzoni, MS).	15340 15346



		XID
b.	Mary Edna U., b. AUG 1895 (MS), md. James William Cartwright, Sr.	15341
c.	Walter Lee U., Sr., b. 13 DEC 1896, d. 22 JAN 1946 (Bur. Lexington Cem., Holmes Co., MS), md. Edna Adams, b. 19 NOV 1893 (Sand Mountain, GA), d. 10 MAR ---- (Bur. Lexington, MS).	15342 15348
d.	Vonnia Alma U., b. DEC 1898 (MS).	15343
e.	M. J. U.	15344
f.	Mallie Pearl U., md. A. C. Brock.	15345, 15349
9.	Martha U.	15350
10.	Ara Minta U., b. 13 APR 1875, d. 20 MAY 1965 (Bur. Bradley, MS), md. 18 DEC 1898 (Oktibbeha Co., MS) Charles Rufus Sanders.	4353 15351
a.	Henry Eckford Sanders, b. 5 OCT 1899, d. 8 MAR 1964 (Bur. Odd Fellows Cem.), md. 1 JAN 1921 Ruby Leo Gilreath.	15352 15359
b.	Oscar C. Sanders, b. 16 SEP 1901, d. 6 OCT 1918.	15353
c.	Nettys Myrtis Sanders, b. 25 FEB 1906, md. 17 MAY 1926 (West Point, MS) William W. Miller II, b. 24 SEP 1904 (Bell School House Community).	15354 15360
d.	Morris Prichard Sanders, b. 22 OCT 1908, d. 25 MAY 1910.	15355
e.	Mattie Ethel Sanders, b. 12 OCT 1910, md. 11 NOV 1939 Robert Gaines Crowe.	15356 15361
f.	Marvin Alvin Sanders, b. 13 NOV 1913, md. 14 OCT 1939 (West Point, MS) Ruth Marie Rethford, b. 31 AUG 1917 (Starkville, MS).	15357 15362
g.	Walter Gardner Sanders, b. 4 AUG 1916, d. 6 JAN 1974 (Cleveland, MS)(Bur. Cleveland Memorial Gardens), md. (1st) AUG 1939 Benny Frank Martin, md. (2nd) Sarah Louise Levington, b. JAN, d. 28 SEP 1947 (Greenwood, MS)(Bur. Starkville, MS).	15358 15363 15364
E.	Dau, b. 1820-1830.	
F.	James Courtney U.	
G.	Calvin Burnett U., b. 1827-1831 (NC). (In Walker Co., TX 1860).	1113
H.	Sion U. (Twin), b. ca 1833 (NC).	1114
I.	Delenia U. (Twin), b. ca 1833 (NC), md. _____ Couroy.	1115
1.	Frances E. Couroy.	
2.	John Couroy.	
J.	Cynthia U., b. 1836 (Dallas Co., AL), d. ca 1871 (TX), md. 17 FEB 1852 (Perry Co., AL) William Scarborough, b. 8 MAY 1830 (Greene Co., AL), d. 11 JUL 1913 (Coke Co., TX) (Bur. Sanco, Coke Co., TX).	1116 11587
1.	Leigh Franklin Scarborough, b. 1 JAN 1853 (AL), d. 27 SEP 1919 (Tom Green Co., TX)(Bur. Coke Co., TX), md. SEP 1875 (McLennan Co., TX) Nancy Penelope Harris, b. 7 NOV 1858 (GA), d. 21 MAR 1914 (Tom Green Co., TX) (Bur. Coke Co., TX).	11817 11831
a.	Charles William Scarborough, b. 11 JUL 1876, d. ca 1920 (Alaska), md. 3 MAR 1907 Leona _____.	11822
b.	Margaret Ida Scarborough, b. 2 SEP 1878, md. 13 SEP 1899 (Coke Co., TX) Bennie Harvey Ross.	11823 11832
c.	Walter Franklin Scarborough, b. 12 NOV 1880 (TX),	11824

		XID
	d. 1959 (Roxe, OK), md. Saphronia Charlotte Gartman, b. 11 FEB 1889 (Pontotoc, TX).	11833
d.	Mattie Elizabeth Scarborough, b. 24 DEC 1882 (TX), md. Boyd Wall.	11825 11834
e.	Ada Marvin Scarborough, b. 16 DEC 1884, d. 28 AUG 1885.	11826
f.	Jesse Lonzo Scarborough, b. 21 JUL 1887 (Erath Co., TX), d. 29 SEP 1972 (Waco, TX)(Bur. Coke Co., TX), md. (1st) Mollie E. Walker, md (2nd) 3 SEP 1905 (Coke Co., TX) Hattie Lee Cleper, b. 26 APR 1891 (Caddo Co., TX), d. 6 APR 1967 (Tom Green Co., TX) (Bur. Coke Co., TX).	11827 11835 11836
g.	Mary Etta Scarborough, b. 18 AUG 1889, md. 9 DEC 1912 (Coke Co., TX) Horace Preston Baze.	11828 11837
h.	Olive May Scarborough, b. 1 JAN 1892, md. 11 JUN 1916 Jewell S. Dickey.	11829 11838
i.	Dona Viola Scarborough, b. 10 OCT 1894, md. George Boswell.	11830 11839
2.	Darchiula J. Scarborough, b. 1855 (Walker Co., TX), d. 1860's (TX).	11818
3.	Mary Elizabeth Scarborough, b. 14 SEP 1857 (Walker Co., TX), d. 1 SEP 1897 (Coke Co., TX)(Bur. Sanco, Coke Co., TX), md. 8 JUL 1874 (McLennan Co., TX) Sinclair Stephen Craddock, b. 10 AUG 1850 (Fannin Co., TX), d. 13 JAN 1929 (Tom Green Co., TX)(Bur. Coke Co., TX).	11588 11589
a.	Donah Annah Craddock, b. 10 JUN 1876 (McLennan Co., TX), d. 23 DEC 1957 (Mineral Wells, TX)(Bur. Mineral Wells, TX), md. 2 OCT 1895 (Coke Co., TX) Charles Wilson Wulfjen, Sr., b. 7 MAR 1874 (Fayette Co., TX), d. 14 OCT 1949 (Mineral Wells, TX)(Bur. Mineral Wells, TX).	11847 11856
b.	Thomas William Craddock, b. 19 JAN 1878 (Bosque Co., TX), d. 19 MAY 1954 (Andrews Co., TX)(Bur. Andrews Co., TX), md. 28 OCT 1901 Mary H. Perry, b. 28 JAN 1883 (Comanche Co., TX), d. 19 SEP 1957 (Andrews Co., TX)(Bur. Andrews Co., TX).	11848 11857
c.	Mattie P. Craddock, b. 22 DEC 1879 (Palo Pinto Co., TX), d. 26 NOV 1881 (Bur. China Springs, McLennan Co., TX).	11849
d.	Edmond Lee Craddock, b. 10 APR 1882 (McLennan Co., TX), d. 4 DEC 1936 (Mineral Wells, TX)(Bur. Mineral Wells, TX), md. 7 JUL 1917 Anna Alma Clark, b. 4 JUL 1893 (Holton, KS), d. - (Mineral Wells, TX).	11850 11858
e.	Vela Elizabeth Craddock, b. 3 AUG 1884 (McLennan Co., TX), d. 25 OCT 1977 (Grandview, TX)(Bur. Grandview, Johnson Co., TX), md. 23 APR 1905 (Coke Co., TX) Charles Wraymond Briscoe, Sr., b. 7 DEC 1877 (Hunt Co., TX), d. 21 FEB 1967 (Grandview, TX)(Bur. Grandview, TX).	11851 11859
f.	Cora Lois Craddock, b. 8 FEB 1887 (McLennan Co., TX), d. 20 NOV 1983 (Wichita Falls, TX)(Bur. Wichita Falls TX), md. 27 MAR 1918 (Midland Co., TX) Joe J. Perkins, b. 7 MAR 1874 (Lamar Co., TX), d. 15 SEP 1960 (Wichita Falls, TX)(Bur. Wichita Falls, TX).	11590 11591



		XID
g.	Jesse Sinclair Craddock, Sr., b. 28 SEP 1889 (McLennan Co., TX), d. 3 MAY 1977 (Mitchell Co., TX)(Bur. Colorado City, Mitchell Co., TX), md. 28 SEP 1914 (Tom Green Co., TX) Lela Adaline Morrow, b. 11 JAN 1895 (Johnson Co., TX).	11853 11860
h.	Mary Hester Craddock, b. 15 APR 1892 (Coke Co., TX), d. 24 AUG 1895 (Coke Co., TX)(Bur. Sanco, Coke Co., TX).	11854
i.	Lottie Lavenia Craddock, b. 4 MAY 1894 (Coke Co., TX), d. 24 FEB 1964 (Dallas Co., TX)(Bur. Restland Cem., Dallas, TX), md. (1st) 20 OCT 1914 (Coke Co., TX) James Arthur Ulmer, Sr., b. 24 JUN 1890 (Coke Co., TX), d. 23 AUG 1936 (Wichita Co., TX)(Bur. Tom Green Co., TX), md. (2nd) 16 JUN 1956 (Dallas, TX) Charles Samuel Braden, b. 19 SEP 1887 (Chanute, KS), d. 3 OCT 1970 (MN vs Dallas TX?) (Cremated).	11855 11861 11862
j.	James Marvin Craddock, b. 27 AUG 1897 (Coke Co., TX), d. 23 JUN 1900 (Coke Co., TX)(Bur. Sanco, Coke Co., TX).	11852
4.	Martha Ellen Scarborough, b. 20 MAR 1861 (TX), d. 16 MAR 1928 (Taylor Co., TX), md. (1st) 17 JUN 1877 (McLennan Co., TX) Berry T. White, b. 29 AUG 1854 (TX), d. 1884, md. (2nd) E. Reeves Allen, d. 1927 (Taylor Co., TX).	11819 11863 11868
a.	Eula White.	11864
b.	Hettie White.	11865
c.	Walter Turner White, b. 14 AUG 1878, md. 24 JUL 1902 Ola Minta McAden.	11866 11875
d.	Luther Ebin White, b. 24 FEB 1880 (Nacogdoches Co., TX), d. 24 NOV 1952 (Tom Green Co., TX), md. 9 DEC 1909 (Lampasas Co., TX) Eula Fanny Hallmark, b. 9 NOV 1889 (Dexter, TX), d. 27 OCT 1969 (Brady, TX).	11867 11876
e.	Lella Allen, b. -, d. SEP 1981 (Bur. Lubbock Co., TX), md. Jim Trussel.	11869 11877
f.	Nora Allen, b. -, d. - (Oklahoma City, OK), md. Emmit Ross McConnell.	11870 11878
g.	Lavena Emma Allen, md. L. A. Howard.	11871, 11879
h.	William B. Allen, b. -, d. 1978 (Port Aransas, TX) (Bur. Tarrant Co., TX), md. Pearl Patterson.	11872 11880
i.	Vernon R. Allen, b. 8 JUN 1893, d. 30 JUL 1942 (Taylor Co., TX).	11873
j.	Omer Allen, b. -, d. - (Bur. Tahoka, TX), md. Vera Lee Lloyd.	11874 11881
5.	Willie Anna Scarborough, b. 1865 (TX), md. 21 DEC 1882 (McLennan Co., TX) W. Cox.	11820 11840
6.	Emma Scarborough, b. MAR 1870 (TX), md. John Creighton.	11821 11841
a.	Elsie Creighton.	11842
b.	Ovid Creighton.	11843
c.	Clyde Creighton.	11844
d.	Dohan M. Creighton.	11845
e.	Curtis Creighton.	11846

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

1

Mrs. Randall Little reports on the 9th Mississippi Upchurch Reunion 10340 held on 21 JUN 1986 in Leroy Percy State Park at Hollandale, MS. There were 21 present. The Donald Eugene Upchurch, Sr. family and the Ernest Elwood Upchurch family of Arkansas traveled the farthest. The event will be held again next year but it may be moved to a cooler season. Watch this space for more details.

We are proud to present the outline of the Moses U./Murray U. Subclan in this issue of the UB. 1/14

A nice packet has arrived from Thomas Benton Upchurch, Jr. of Raeford, NC. He is of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. 3529 1/11

From Mrs. William S. Upchurch of Waynesville, NC we have received this very sad but beautifully penned note: "I regret to inform you that my beloved husband, William Shelton Upchurch, after several years of disability and illness passed away February 24, 1986. We were visiting some of his relatives in the Holly Springs, Wake County, NC area, so he died in the same vicinity where he was born and reared. We brought him back here to Waynesville for funeral services then to Lake City, FL (Mt. Carmel Cemetery) for burial. This was where we 8759 8736

owned a farm and reared our children..... Bill and I both have greatly enjoyed the Upchurch Bulletin. It gave him an interest during very trying times...." Bill was of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. May he rest in peace. 1/11

XID

INTRODUCTION AND OUTLINE OF THE MURRAY UPCHURCH SUBCLAN OF THE MOSES UPCHURCH CLAN (Clan No. 1)	XID 14 1
The story is now familiar to us about how Moses U. and his brother Nathan U. I moved their well established families from Franklin Co., NC to the border of Wake and Chatham Counties. This move took place about 1804 and Moses U. settled just across the border in Chatham Co., NC and Nathan U. I settled just short of the border and on the Wake Co., NC side. Murray U., son of Moses U. was b. 1 NOV 1797 (Franklin Co., NC) and so was about seven years old when he moved to Chatham Co. The records show clearly that Murray U. grew to manhood in eastern Chatham Co., NC, raised his family there, lived to a ripe old age there, and died and was buried there. Such records as are available tell the bare minimum. He was a solid farmer and landowner and raised a family of ten children. We have yet to identify his church affiliation, if any. He appears to have avoided scrapes with the law and shows no record of having been enamored with politics. His age made him unavailable for the wars of 1812 and 1861-65 but his sons served in the latter.	1 78 1 78 14,1 14
From the census records we learn the following about Murray U.	14
1800 (Franklin Co., NC) - There are slots in the home of Moses U. for three sons under age ten. One would have been Murray U., age 3.	1 14
1810 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray U. should have been age 13 and in his father's home but the records show no males age 10-16 as of 1810. There were younger and older children present.	14
1820 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray U., age 23, is shown as head of his own household in the age bracket 18-25. He and Nancy Scott had been married in August.	14 15
1830 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray, age 30-40 and wife Nancy are present with their first five children.	14,15
1840 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray and Nancy now have 9 children but only 7 are accounted for in the household. The oldest dau md. 28 JAN 1840 so this accounts for her absence. There is no slot for son, Farrington U. who was b. 1832 and would have been 8 years old. The absence of a slot for him here and lack of any further reference to him in the records leads us to presume that he died before the 1840 census.	14,15 32
1850 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray and Nancy have now had their 10th and last child. The five older ones have left the nest and the four younger ones are still present, Farrington U. having died.	14,15 32
1860 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray and wife Nancy have with them now only their two youngest daughters. Present for unknown reasons was one Nancy E. Carson, age 26. Before the 1870 census Murray's wife	14,15 4111,14



Nancy would die and he would marry Nancy E. (Dodd) Carson as his 2nd wife. Before the 1870 census the second wife would die and Murray would marry thirdly Sallie Temples. There was no issue from the last two marriages.

XID  
15,4111  
14,4112

1870 (Chatham Co., NC) - At age 73 Murray U. has md. a third time within the year and is shown as having \$1000 in real estate and \$1000 in personal property - not bad for those days. He was considerate of his bride for his will was rewritten on 6 APR 1870 with good foresight since he died less than two years later. None of Murray's children are in the home with him in 1870 but there are two others present. One is Ephraim U., age 21, a black male laborer, presumably a former slave of one of the Upchurches. The other person is Sophronia Scoble, age 10, female, white. This is his granddaughter by his daughter Rachel U.

14  
14  
16216  
33

1880 (Chatham Co., NC) - Murray has now passed on but his widow, Sallie (Temples U.) age 68, is found keeping house by herself.

14  
4112

For the children of Murray U. we have uneven amounts of information. For Martha U., Elizabeth U., Mary U., and Clary U. we have only the names of their husbands. No doubt more details are available in the census records. Farrington U. is presumed to have died young and John H. U. never married. For Emily Catherine U. and Paschal B. U. we have a sketchy outline. For Isham Sims U. we have a full blown outline, thanks to the intensive efforts of the late Etta Belle (Lewter) West who made this ancestor of hers the centerpiece of her outstanding Upchurch book. For Rachel U. we have an effective collaborator in Patsy Penny (Horton) Wagner of High Point, NC and hope to be making improvements for Rachel U. over time. Correspondents are needed for all of the children of Murray U.

14  
21,22,35,37  
32  
27,28,30  
25  
836  
33  
7091  
33  
14

*needed nephew of same who is son of Moses*

The family of Murray U. was deeply involved in the Civil War. Son, Isham Sims U., served on the battlefield and son, Paschal B. U. died in the war. We presume his son-in-law, Stephen Scoble, was killed in service. It is likely that some of his other sons-in-law saw service also.

14  
25,30  
34

We have adopted the spelling - Murray U. - although the - Murry version is found in the records from time to time. Murray U. bought 160 acres of land in Chatham Co., NC in 1824 from his father. In 1849 Murray U. bought 100 acres, also in Chatham Co., NC from his brother Sims U. In 1827 and 1828 we find three entries for Murray U. in a country store in the neighborhood where he lived. There was a Murray U. bible but it has been lost for many years.

14  
14  
14  
17,14  
14

West in her Upchurch book reports that Murray U. died suddenly in a neighborhood store on 19 MAR 1872. She indicates that Murray U. and his three wives are buried at his home place which is called the Mulholland Place. It is located on NC Route 751 in Chatham Co., NC near White Oak Creek. Your editor has never been able to locate any of the Chatham Co., NC sites pertaining to Moses U. or his children including the sites mentioned for Murray U. in this article. We would

836,14  
14  
1  
14



XID

welcome help in locating these parcels of land. They are hallowed sites for several thousand descendants.

An outline for Murray U., a 6th generation descendant of Michael U. I, and the following 7th, 8th and 9th generations is provided below to the extent that information is available. 14 146

# OUTLINE

IX. Murray U., b. 1 NOV 1797 (Franklin Co., NC), d. 19 FEB 1872 (Bur. Chatham Co., NC) md. (1st) 23 AUG 1820 (Wake Co., NC)	14
Nancy Scott, b. 29 NOV 1801, d. 26 JUL 1864 (Bur. AS HUS), md. (2nd) Nancy E. (Dodd) Carson, b. ca 1834, d. 1869 (Bur. AS HUS), md. (3rd) 1 MAR 1870 Sallie Temples, b. 1812, d. - (Bur. AS HUS).	15 4111 4112
A. Martha U., b. 3 AUG 1821, md. 28 JAN 1840 (Chatham Co., NC) Simeon Yates.	21 22
B. Elizabeth U., b. 17 JAN 1823, md. 2 DEC 1844 Haywood Lawrence (Pat).	23 24
C. Isham Sims U., CSA, b. 31 DEC 1824, d. 5 APR 1916 (Bur. Wake Co., NC), md. (15) 23 DEC 1851 (Chatham Co., NC) Adelia Beavers, b. 8 MAR 1832, d. 24 SEP 1893 (Bur. AS HUS), md. (2nd) 3 FEB 1903 Mrs. R. A. Taylor, b. -, d. 10 DEC 1911.	25 26 2116
1. Josephine Frances U., b. 18 FEB 1852, d. 6 OCT 1954, md. 10 NOV 1872 James M. Broadwell, b. 10 FEB 1844, d. 17 SEP 1917.	39 40
a. Ora Estella Broadwell, b. 28 SEP 1873, md. 28 NOV 1895 William Henry Mills, b. 8 FEB 1872, d. 28 APR 1946.	2118 16205
b. Joseph Mahlon Broadwell, b. 6 AUG 1875, d. 22 JUL 1961, md. 5 JAN 1898 Geneva Ann Edwards, b. 22 OCT 1873, d. 10 MAR 1961.	2119 16206
c. Adelia Elizabeth Broadwell, b. 17 OCT 1876, d. 10 DEC 1969, md. S. Z. Sears, b. 10 APR 1872, d. 12 JUN 1942.	2120 16207
d. Marcellus Graham Broadwell, b. 31 MAR 1879, d. 17 MAR 1958, md. 9 DEC 1903 Iola Lydia Edwards, b. 19 APR 1884, d. 26 JUN 1954.	2121 16208
e. Fred Jarratt Broadwell, b. 8 NOV 1884, md. 4 NOV 1912 Lena Denton, b. 28 OCT 1886.	2122 16209
f. Vara Emily Broadwell, b. 25 SEP 1887, d. 21 MAR 1927, md. Wade Booker.	2123 16210
2. George Winston U., b. 8 JUN 1854, d. 10 APR 1947, md. 19 OCT 1880 Mary Jane Elizabeth Carlton, b. 11 MAR 1862, d. 12 JAN 1920.	41 2117
a. Enna Irene U., b. 20 JUN 1882, d. 27 APR 1946, md. DEC 1900 Thomas Clingman Barbee, Jr., b. 28 MAY 1879, d. 22 FEB 1953.	501 2129
b. Penda Eugene U., b. 5 DEC 1883, d. 28 FEB 1949, md. 5 AUG 1908 Ina Blanche Massey, b. 13 JAN 1887, d. 22 SEP 1957.	505 2130
c. Charles Franklin U., b. 29 SEP 1885, d. 26 JUN 1951, md. 20 FEB 1910 Luriline Talmage Shepherd, b. 27 JAN 1891, d. 5 JAN 1953.	594 2172

		XID
d.	Addie Blanche U., b. 1 AUG 1888, d. 3 NOV 1934, md. 29 NOV 1911 Grover Vance Massey.	238 2239
e.	Monroe Isham U., Sr., b. 18 JUN 1890, d. 17 OCT 1957, md. 17 JUN 1916 Lucille Bailey, b. 29 OCT 1894 (Durham Co., NC), d. 1981 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC).	597 2240
f.	Leon Winston U., b. 6 JAN 1892, d. 22 JUL 1945, md. 18 NOV 1922 Nannie Ruth Christian, b. 18 MAY 1900.	598 2261
g.	Beula Gertrude U., b. 30 MAR 1894, d. -, md. 15 OCT 1919 Ira Clarence Yates, Sr., b. 25 JUL 1891, d. 29 SEP 1958.	599 2270
h.	Otho Carlton U., b. 28 FEB 1896, d. 21 FEB 1913, md. 26 OCT 1921 Inez Page.	600 2276
i.	Raymond Clair U., Sr., b. 6 APR 1897, d. 10 SEP 1933, md. 10 JUL 1924 Martha Jane Emerson, b. 18 DEC 1905, d.	601 2277
3.	Matthew Robert U., b. 25 APR 1856, d. 10 SEP 1938 (Bur. Green Level, NC), md. 8 MAR 1882 Roxannah A. Bolling, b. 2 OCT 1859, d. 16 MAR 1942 (Bur. Green Level, NC).	43 44
a.	Cecil Leroy U., b. 21 JAN 1883, d. 11 FEB 1912, md. Mary Culpepper. No issue.	634 2294
b.	Hercelia U., b. 24 JAN 1886, d. 27 JUL 1888 (Bur. Isham Sins U. Family Cem.).	635
c.	Julia Ethel U., b. 5 APR 1888, d. - (Southern Pines, NC), md. 26 FEB 1907 Cornelius R. Mills, b. 13 SEP 1885, d. 8 MAR 1966.	636 2295
d.	Hugh Conway U., b. 16 OCT 1890, d. 13 OCT 1972 (Bur. Montlawn), md. 1 JUN 1913 Ara Vivien U. (of Nathan/ Burtis U. Clan), b. 23 OCT 1894, d. 30 SEP 1968 (Cary, NC)(Bur. Montlawn).	637 880,78 /80
e.	Adelia Jane U., b. 20 JUN 1893 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 29 APR 1985 (Apex, NC)(Bur. Olive Chapel, Wake Co., NC), md. 18 FEB 1912 (Wake Co., NC) Hollie Oliver Kelly, Sr., b. 13 APR 1890 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 22 JUL 1975 (Chapel Hill, NC)(Bur. Olive Chapel Ch. Cem., Wake Co., NC).	638 2346
f.	Laura Elmira U., b. 27 DEC 1896, d. 5 MAY 1970, md. 12 DEC 1917 Rastus G. Beckwith, b. 14 JUL 1892, d. 8 JAN 1975.	639 2386
g.	Delma U., b. 8 JAN 1900, md. 8 JAN 1921 George W. Farrar, b. 24 MAR 1884, d. 1 JUN 1956. No issue.	640 2413
4.	Marceline Gatling U., b. 20 JUN 1857, d. 19 NOV 1931, md. 7 JUN 1896 Adolphus Taylor Rogers, b. 19 JUN 1848, d. 13 SEP 1919.	45 46
a.	Earldine Gatling Rogers, b. 13 JUN 1897, d. -, md. 23 OCT 1920 Allie Jerome Byrd, b. 9 AUG 1896, d. 16 OCT 1965.	2414 2416
b.	Pauline Taylor Rogers, b. 10 SEP 1900, d. -, md. 9 MAY 1925 John M. Rigsbee, b. 21 SEP 1902, d. -.	2415 2424
5.	Thomas Irving U., b. 5 AUG 1859, d. 4 APR 1939, md. 14 FEB 1883 Agnes Jackson Mitchell, b. 5 MAR 1863, d. 15 APR 1930.	47 48
a.	Robert Cleveland U., b. 18 OCT 1884, d. 6 FEB 1969 (Raleigh, NC)(Bur. Montlawn), md. 20 NOV 1920 Ruth Partridge.	2430 2434

		XID
b.	Ella May U., b. 15 SEP 1888, d. -, md. 17 DEC 1911	2431
	Harvey McPerlin Mann, b. 31 JUL 1888, d. 4 DEC 1955.	2435
c.	Walter Roger U., b. 20 DEC 1894, d. 6 MAY 1961, md.	2432
	1 FEB 1922 Mittie Spivey, b. 7 JAN 1903, d. 5 FEB 1965.	2442
d.	Lee Roy U., b. 11 DEC 1895 (Wake Co., NC), d. 1982	661
	(Johnston Co., NC), md. 24 DEC 1915 Flossie May Hamilton, b. 22 APR 1898.	2462
e.	Charlie Daniel U., b. 8 SEP 1897, d. 18 DEC 1977	2433
	(Raleigh, NC)(Bur. Montlawn), md. 7 MAY 1922	
	A. Myrtle Adams, b. 15 APR 1903, d. 17 MAR 1983	2484
	(Raleigh, NC)(Bur. Montlawn, Raleigh, NC).	
6.	Varina Fisher U., b. 18 AUG 1861, d. 10 MAY 1944 (Bur.	49
	Olive Chapel Bap. Ch., Wake Co., NC), md. 8 AUG 1886	
	Cornelius Theodore Goodwin, b. 26 APR 1862, d. 15 DEC 1922	50
	(Bur. SAME AS WIF).	
a.	Elma Frances Goodwin, b. 20 JAN 1889, md. 24 OCT 1914	2497
	Willie Walker Wilkins, b. 24 APR 1888, d. 23 MAR 1951.	16168
b.	George Dempsey Goodwin, b. 22 FEB 1890, d. 7 MAR 1963,	2498
	md. 6 MAY 1932 Jenny Piccola Poole, b. 14 JUN 1896,	16211
	d. 8 FEB 1966.	
c.	Irving Winslow Goodwin, b. 24 OCT 1891, d. 3 MAR 1967,	2499
	md. 9 SEP 1920 Nettie Mae Topps, b. 15 OCT 1901.	16212
d.	Adelia Irena Goodwin, b. 29 DEC 1893, d. 27 APR 1970,	2500
	md. 11 FEB 1917 Lindsey Edward Poe.	4257
e.	Exum Murry Goodwin, b. 17 OCT 1895, md. 20 MAY 1926	2501
	Mary Olivia Williams, b. 9 DEC 1912, d. 18 MAY 1960.	16213
f.	Hallie Gray Goodwin, b. 13 JAN 1898, md. 24 DEC 1919	2502
	Edward Lawson Goodwin, b. 18 OCT 1893, d. 18 APR 1954.	16214
g.	Newton Jackson Goodwin, b. 28 SEP 1899 (Chatham Co.,	2503
	NC), d. 7 JAN 1968 (Apex, NC)(Bur. Olive Chapel Ch.,	
	Wake Co., NC), md. 6 FEB 1921 (Apex, NC) Jeanette	
	Lydia Jenks, b. 30 JAN 1905 (Apex, NC), d. 24 JUL	12644
	1985 (Raleigh, NC)(Bur. Montlawn, Raleigh, NC).	
	DIV 1932. She md. 2nd Dallas Owens.	
7.	Isham Paschal U., b. 27 JUN 1863, d. 22 APR 1934 (Bur.	51
	Olive Chapel Bap. Ch. Cem., Wake Co., NC), md. 22 DEC 1888	
	Molly Elmyra Powell, b. 22 NOV 1868, d. 27 MAY 1946 (Bur.	52
	SAME AS HUS).	
a.	Sidney Robert U., b. 30 OCT 1889, d. -, md. 17 AUG 1910	2504
	Laura Evie Collins, b. 16 APR 1887, d. 13 NOV 1969.	2509
b.	Lonnie Milton U., 2nd Lt. WWI, b. 19 JUN 1891 (New	664
	Hill, NC), d. OCT 1952, md. (1st) 13 FEB 1919	
	Edith Delle Lewis, b. 18 FEB 1897, d. 1985, md. (2nd)	2518
	2 APR 1933 Nancy McSwain, b. 6 FEB 1900, d. 30 MAR 1951.	2519
c.	Eva Pearl U., b. 14 AUG 1892, md. 26 DEC 1911, md. Bevy	2505
	Poole, b. 1 NOV 1886, d. 13 NOV 1967.	2529
d.	Dennis Paschal U., b. 25 SEP 1899, d. 16 AUG 1949	2506
	(Bur. Olive Chapel Bap. Ch. Cem., Wake Co., NC), md	
	Alon Howard, b. 1905, d. 1956 (Bur. SAME AS HUS).	2535



		XID
e.	Frank Cleo U., b. 7 DEC 1900, md. 15 APR 1933 Katherine Mauney Winfield, b. 3 APR 1902.	2507 2564
f.	Vena Lee U., b. 6 SEP 1902, d. 1973 (Bur. Olive Chapel Ch. Cem., Wake Co., NC), md. 15 JUN 1928 Robert Allen Lawrence, b. 1 JUL 1902, d. 6 JUN 1954 (Bur. SAME AS WIF).	2508 2570
8.	Ora Aurelia U., b. 5 MAR 1866, d. 25 JUL 1962 (Bur. Durham, NC), md. 25 DEC 1894 Robert Ulysses Lewter, b. 13 MAY 1870, d. 8 JUL 1944.	53 54
a.	Etta Belle Lewter, b. 22 NOV 1895 (Wake Co., NC), d. 10 OCT 1984 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), md. 24 MAY 1922 (Durham, NC) George Henry West III, b. 12 MAY 1895 (Philadelphia, PA), d. 15 MAY 19-- (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC).	836 840
b.	Florine Tempe Lewter, b. 24 MAY 1898 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 24 AUG 1969 (Durham, NC)(Bur. Durham, NC), Never married.	837
9.	Sidney Harrison U., b. 4 NOV 1867, d. 2 OCT 1878 (Bur. AS FAT).	55
10.	Franklin Pierce U., b. 1 JUN 1871 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 18 NOV 1936 (Wake Co., NC)(Bur. Salem Ch., Apex, NC), md. 11 DEC 1901 Etoile Barker, b. 13 OCT 1882, d. 18 FEB 1964 (Bur. Salem Ch., Apex, NC).	56 57
a.	Melzar Jackson U., b. 1902, md. 1924 Agnes Brett, b. 25 JAN 1904.	2581 2589
b.	Johnson Clyde U., b. 1905, md. 1934 Irene Honeycutt, b. 1913.	658,2601
c.	Annie Dell U., b. 1908, md. Henry M Thompson, b. 1890, d. 1955.	2582,2612
d.	Harley Wilkerson U., b. 22 SEP 1911 (Wake Co., NC), d. 18 AUG 1981 (Ahoskie, NC)(Bur. Ahoskie, NC), md. JUN 1936 (Raleigh, NC) Kate Mercedes Brett, b. 25 JAN 1906 (Ahoskie, NC), d. 1 JUL 1981 (Ahoskie, NC) (Bur. Ahoskie, NC).	2583 2613
e.	Cecil Franklin U., b. 1913, md. 1942 Hazle Apple, b. 1912.	2584,2622
f.	Owen Swain U., b. 20 NOV 1915, d. 4 JUL 1939 (Bur. Salem Ch., Apex, NC). No issue.	2585
g.	Mary Louise U., b. 1919, md. 1942 Edward Zalewski, b. 1912.	2586,2627
h.	Doris Winona U., b. 1921, md. 1946 Charles Bernard Nelson, b. 1919.	2587 2634
i.	Jean Gwendolyn U., b. 1926, md. 1944 James Owen Beard, b. 1922.	2588 2637
11.	Mary Adelia U., b. 3 AUG 1872, d. 2 NOV 1880 (Bur. AS FAT).	58
12.	Laura Alice U., b. 14 MAR 1875 (Chatham Co., NC), d. 15 MAY 1963 (Bur. High Point, NC), md. 7 MAR 1897 Malcus Sidney Barbee, b. 12 DEC 1870 (Wake Co., NC), d. 19 DEC 1924 (High Point, NC)(Bur. High Point, NC).	59 60
a.	May Barbee, b. 8 MAY 1898, md. 16 FEB 1922 Monroe Bean, b. 18 OCT 1882 (NC), d. 25 JUN 1932 (Baltimore, MD).	2645 12511



		XID
b.	Ralph Sidney Barbee, b. 11 SEP 1899, d. 6 JAN 1950, md. JUL 1940 Ella Burns Rivers.	2646 12510
c.	Paul Staton Barbee, b. 1901, d. SEP 1901.	2647
d.	Lida Ruth Barbee, b. 21 SEP 1904, md. 27 AUG 1928 Paul Leary Jones, b. 15 FEB 1905, d. 30 JUL 1952 (Bur. Burlington, NC).	2648 12507
e.	Frances Barbee, b. 1 JUN 1917, md. APR 1957 Harry Cain.	2649 12509
13.	Nancy Cora U., b. 17 FEB 1877, d. 26 NOV 1962, md. 4 DEC 1898 John Bazil Mills, Sr., b. 1 JUL 1877, d. 26 NOV 1962.	61 62
a.	Ralph Tyree Mills, b. 4 JUN 1900, md. (1st) 8 MAR 1923 Hettie Irene Averitt, b. 22 JAN 1905. DIV	2650 15953
b.	Edna Blanche Mills, b. 18 OCT 1901, md. 12 AUG 1928 Levi Larndon Hedgepeth, b. 1 JUN 1899, d. 3 SEP 1958.	2651 15954
c.	Reginald Lee Mills, b. 27 JUN 1904, md. 28 OCT 1924 Cleo Horton, b. 23 AUG 1906.	2652 15955
d.	Bunn Reavis Mills, WWII, b. 8 AUG 1910, d. 8 MAR 1942 (KIA), md. 1 FEB 1940 Eleanor Katherine Lawrence, b. 15 MAY 1914.	2653 15956
e.	John Bazil Mills, Jr., b. 2 APR 1913, md. 16 OCT 1934 Edith Mae Yates, b. 6 MAY 1918.	2654 15957
f.	Cora Lee Mills, b. 7 APR 1915, md. 5 AUG 1938 Michael Kalen Berkut (PhD) (Col. USA Ret.), b. 30 JUN 1915.	2655 15958
D.	John H. U., b. 24 OCT 1826. Never married.	27
E.	Emily Catherine U., b. 7 DEC 1828, d. 19 NOV 1924, md. Addison Council, b. 14 JAN 1824, d. 19 NOV 1914 (or 9 NOV 1924)	28 29
1.	Robenia (Beanie) J. Council, md. _____ Edwards.	815
2.	A. M. Council (Alfonzo - "Fonnie").	816
3.	J. D. Council, md. Ida Jenks, b. 10 OCT 1866, d. 15 JUN 1892 (Bur. Jenks Cem., Green Level, NC).	817,4692
F.	Paschal B. U., CSA, b. 1 AUG 1830, d. Civil War, 4 JUL 1863, md. 6 DEC 1855 (Wake Co., NC) Talitha Olive, b. ca 1835.	30 31
1.	Sarah U., b. ca 1857.	2990,2993
2.	Edward U., b. ca 1859.	2991
3.	Molley U., b. ca 1861.	2992
G.	Farrington, U., b. (13)15 APR 1832 (Farmington?).	32
H.	Rachel U., b. 8 SEP 1835, d. 1879 (Bur. Apex, NC), md. (1st) 28 AUG 1855 (Chatham Co., NC) Stephen Scroble 1/, md. (2nd) James Penny 2/, b. 1819, d. 1895 (Bur. Apex, NC). (James Penny had md. before and had a son Jesse Penny who died 23 JAN 1865 of typhoid fever at St. Petersburg, VA - CSA).	33 34 7086
1.	1/Leonidas Scroble.	16215
2.	1/Sophronia Scroble, b. ca 1860.	16216
3.	2/Martha (Molly) Penny, Died young. Never married.	16217
4.	2/Mary (Rennie) Penny. Died young. Never married.	16218
5.	2/John B. Penny, b. JAN 1866, d. SEP 1948, md. 1886 Serena Blanche Mills, b. JAN 1871, d. JAN 1935.	7087 7088
a.	Eva Estelle Penny, b. 29 MAY 1905 (Apex, NC), md. 10 MAY 1924 (Wake Co., NC) William Wayne Horton, b. 23 FEB 1902, d. 1 AUG 1975.	7089 7090
b.	Everett Penny.	16219

		XID
c.	Berney Penny.	16220
d.	Betty Penny, md. Raymond Baker.	16221,16230
e.	James Verlie Penny.	16222
f.	Ollie Richard Penny.	16223
g.	Julius Maynard Penny.	16224
h.	Wade Hampton Penny.	16225
i.	Luther Harold Penny.	16226
j.	Ellen Penny, md. Turner Ware.	16227,16231
k.	Alma Ione Penny, md. Leo Betts.	16228,16232
l.	Clara Fadine Penny, md. Brodie Duke Arnold.	16229,16233
I.	Mary A. U., b. 6 OCT 1837, d. 18 APR 1885, md. 16 FEB 1861 (Chatham Co., NC) Phillip N. Foushee.	35
		36
J.	Clary U., b. 22 FEB 1843 (Clara), md. Vernon Riggsbee (vs - F. E. Riggsbee ?).	37,38

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

Mrs. Roberts Council Lasater of Charlotte, NC writes that she 9170  
has been invited by Irene Kittinger of Cary, NC to help prepare an  
outline for Sims U., a son of Moses U. Her husband is descended from 17,1  
Sims U. and Abigail Olive. Perhaps someone would like to offer a hand 17,18  
with this project.

Through the good offices of Thomas Benton U., Jr. of Raeford, NC 3529  
there recently came into your editor's hands a copy of the family history  
entitled: "Concerning Our Ancestors - The Johnsons and Their Kin" By  
Ruth Bethea Johnson. 1980. The Johnson history starts in 1780 in \*  
central NC. This family starting with the patriarch Tapley Ormond Johnson, \*  
Sr. lived in what is present day southern Wake and Johnston and Harnett  
Counties in NC. They owned large amounts of land in the vicinity of  
Fuquay-Varina, NC (southern Wake Co.) and have played for many years a  
dominant role in the social, financial and political life of central NC.  
The mother of Thomas Benton U., Jr. comes from this Johnson family, as  
does a wife of one of his Upchurch uncles. There are other intermarriages  
with Upchurches and other related families of the area including a Mills  
relative of my greatgrandmother, Lucretia (Mills) U. The book is filled  
with details of events and family members and relationships. This book is  
a real gem for someone interested in family history linked to central NC.  
Much study will be required to get the most out of it. I hope that ladyluck  
will continue to smile on our Upchurch history project and that many more  
such books will come to our attention.

Eva Lois (Cook) Pollard on 29 SEP 1986 writes from her Little Switzerland, 1154  
NC summer home: "I had a wonderful surprise this past weekend. A first  
cousin of Helen Dansby (Rachel Goodwin Smith) called me. She is the great 16361  
granddaughter of Isham Upchurch and her home is in Apex, NC. She has a 25  
summer home in the same community I am in and has been up here for eight  
years. Needless to say we got together and although we were unaware of our  
relationship all of these 8 years we made up for lost time. She and her  
husband insisted that I come to the picnic and are working hard to make  
it a success."

(Rachel Mary Goodwin is dau of Irving Winslow Goodwin of the Moses U./ 16361,2499  
Murray U. Subclan). 1/14



## VARINA FISHER UPCHURCH &amp; FAMILY

XID  
49

1                      2                                      3                      4                                      5                      6                                      7                                      8                                      9

- |                               |                               |           |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------|
| 1. Hallie Gray Goodwin        | 6. Newton Jackson Goodwin     | 2502,2503 |
| 2. Elma Frances Goodwin       | 7. George Dempsey Goodwin     | 2497,2498 |
| 3. Cornelius Theodore Goodwin | 8. Varina Fisher (U.) Goodwin | 50,49     |
| 4. Exum Murry Goodwin         | 9. Irving Winslow Goodwin     | 2501,2499 |
| 5. Adelia Irene Goodwin       |                               | 2500      |

Varina Fisher U., b. 18 AUG 1861, d. 10 MAY 1944 (Chatham Co., NC), 49  
 md. 8 AUG 1886 C. T. Goodwin, b. 26 APR 1862, d. 15 DEC 1922. Both are 50  
 buried at the Olive Chapel Baptist Church Cemetery in western Wake Co.,



NC, where many other Upchurch relatives are interred. Varina U. is  
the daughter of Isham Sims U., CSA, gdau of Murray U., and ggda of  
Moses U., Head of Upchurch Clan No. 1.

XID  
49  
25,14  
1

Varina and Cornelius lived and farmed and raised their family  
in eastern Chatham Co., NC, near Olive Chapel Church where they  
were active as members. These two individuals are descendants of  
early Upchurch and Goodwin settlers of the Wake Co./Chatham Co.  
border in NC and there are literally thousands of Uncles, Aunts,  
and Cousins of this couple. Many have left the area but a large  
contingent continues to live and work in the area.

We are grateful to Mrs. Curtis Nelson Dansby (nee: Helen  
Frances Goodwin, formerly Charlotte Jane Goodwin) who has helped  
us to focus on this couple who are her grandparents. Helen  
kindly furnished the photo for which we are grateful. She is  
also a key promoter of the Upchurch family reunion which will be  
held this year at 1:00 P.M. on 14 JUN 87 at Ebenezer Methodist  
Church, Route 2, Apex, NC.

14017

UB VOL 8, NO 3, P 89

JUL 1987

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID  
1

We have in recent months had a flurry of correspondence with the  
children of Penda Eugene U., Sr. of the Moses U./Murray U. Subclan.  
Included have been Donah Carlton U., Oliver Wingate U., Pender  
Eugene U., Jr., Rober Stanley U., Iva Jane (U.) Roshelli, and  
Wyman Astor U. Thanks folks for helping on your part of the family.

505,1/14  
602,603,608  
609,610  
606

( A recent call from Nettie Lewis (Byrd) Pendergraft of the  
Moses U./Sims U. Subclan brought more news of descendants in that group.)

11171  
1/171



Pictured above are James Curtis Upchurch, b. 17 MAY 1870 (Middle Creek TSP, Wake Co., NC), d. 5 NOV 1942 (Jacksonville, FL)(Bur. Tallahassee, FL) and his bride shortly after they were married on 24 OCT 1895. She is nee: Repsie Rochester Cotton, b. 11 JUL 1875 (Wake Co., NC), d. 3 OCT 1961 (Leon Co., FL)(Bur. AS HUS).

James Curtis U. was the son of Bennett A. U., CSA, b. 10 MAY 1834, the gs of Whitney U. and the ggs of Moses (Head of Clan 1). James and his two brothers, Thomas Benton U., Sr. and William Joseph U. were b. in poverty in rural Wake Co., NC but worked to overcome their humble beginnings and became men of prominence. No doubt much the same can be said of their sisters, Mrs. Jeff Stevens (nee: Missouri H. U.), and Mrs. Freeman Norris (nee: Lucy J. U.). We have earlier published in the UB the words of Thomas Benton U., Sr. in which he told of their weakened father who came home from the Civil War only to die in 1872 without ever recovering. The children went on to be successful - James in NC, SC and FL; Joseph in GA; and Thomas, Sr. in Raeford, NC. We are proud of the sustained accomplishments of this group in the Moses U./ Whitney U. Subclan.

(Thanks to Bonnie Lounette Pegram for this photo provided to your Editor in her letter of 19 SEP 1979 to him).

UB VOL 9, NO 4, P 131

OCT 1988

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID

1

We continue to surface more "converts" in this clan. Mrs. Scott Warren Gersh, nee: Vicki Marie Barefoot of Raleigh, NC, has recently become active. Vicki is a gd of Lillie W. U. of the Moses/Ruffin U. Subclan. Also from Raleigh, NC, Alan Marshall McGee, Jr. has recently been active in documenting his line. He is a gs of Thomas Benton U., Sr. of the Moses/Whitney U. Subclan. In this latter subclan we also must mention M/M Clyde Upchurch of Mesa, AZ for their abiding interest and strong support of our work.

1/9

2828

1/11

3088,5599

UB VOL 10, NO 2, P 53

APR 1989

CLAN 1. MOSES UPCHURCH

XID

1

Mrs. Scott Warren Gersh, nee: Vicki Marie Barefoot of Raleigh, NC has made two breakthroughs for the Moses U. Clan. She has found positive evidence that Kelly U. is definitely a son of Ruffin U., We had long ago concluded this based on circumstantial evidence. Our cousin Calvin Kelly U. of Las Vegas, NV has long sought proof of this connection and was overjoyed when a call was made to relate the discovery to him. The other discovery Vicki made was that her ancestor, Hanson U., is most likely not a son of Ruffin U. although we had proposed this earlier based on circumstantial evidence. She is now working on the theory that Hanson U. was a son of Gilliam U. who was a son of Moses U., Head of Clan 1. It is really great to have Vicki as an active researcher in the N. C Archives.

1

JUL 1989

CLAN 1. MOSES UPCHURCHXID  
1

Moses U. had a son Sims U. who had five girls and five boys. All five of the boys served in the Confederate Army. Of the five boys the youngest, Courtney U. (named after his Uncle Courtney U.) returned home to marry and raise a family. James Henderson U., the oldest son, had married before enlisting and died in service leaving a baby daughter Mary Ann Tabitha U. The three middle sons Wiliford (Williford) U., b. ca 1841, Winslow U., b. ca 1842, and Winship U., b. ca 1844 have always been considered to be "missing in action" and it is presumed they never married. Now we drop the other shoe. Our Cousin Vicki Barefoot-Gersh of Raleigh, NC has been combing the archives in a search for the father of her ancestor, Hanson U. In the process she has been sending to your editor details on the military service of individuals for the Confederate era. Mostly this adds a useful detail here and there. However, in a recent batch the records revealed that Winship U. was taken prisoner by the Federal forces and subsequently joined them! The records show he was born in Chatham Co., NC and that he was a farmer there until he enlisted in the CSA at age 17 in Wake Co., NC on 28 MAY 1861 for the war. He was captured by the Federal forces on 7 NOV 1863 at Rappahannock Station, VA and was confined at Point Lookout, MD where he joined the U. S. Service on 17 FEB 1864. He mustered into Company E, 1st Regiment, U. S. Volunteers at Norfolk, VA on 1 MAY 1864 for three years. He deserted the U. S. Forces near Fort Benton, Montana Territory on 3 JUL 1865. What the records do not yet tell us is quite a lot! Did the folks back home learn that he had "gone over to the Feds" and, if so, how did they feel about it? What happened to him after he deserted? Did he then come back home or did he stay out West? Did he change his name upon desertion? Are there more records on this case? All of this is very interesting and probably falls under the heading of "you have gotta do what you have gotta do!"

We welcome Mrs. Joy Kirks-Krueger of Raleigh, NC as a new correspondent. She is of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan.



## II. PHOTOGRAPH

Laura Jane Upchurch of the  
Moses Upchurch/Whitney Upchurch Subclan

XID  
8720  
1,11



Laura Jane Upchurch, b. 4 AUG 1863 (Chatham Co., NC), 8720  
d. 28 MAR 1927 (Johnston Co., NC)(BUR. Smithfield, NC),  
md. 1st \_\_\_\_\_ Gilbert; md. 2nd, 11 MAR 1888 William  
"Billy" Kirks, b. 22 MAR 1863 (AUG 1860)(Wake Co., NC), 23167  
d. 15 DEC 1939 (Wilson Co., NC)(BUR. Hinton Cem. near  
Archer's Lodge, Johnston Co., NC). Laura was the dau 8720  
of Silas Merritt Upchurch and the gd of Candis U. 8716,8715  
of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. This photo has 1,11  
come to us through the courtesy of Wanda Joy (Kirks) 2317  
Krueger, a ggd of Laura. The original of the photo was 8720  
owned by Wilma Futch Rollins of Selma, NC, a gd of 23490  
Laura. 8720

XID

Laura had two children by her first husband and eight by her second husband. We are grateful to Joy who as a recent correspondent has sent so much detail on her line. Unfortunately, for us, she and her husband are relocating for a few years to the Far East. She assures me her interest in family history will continue. We have some rather colorful stories about the behavior of William Kirks, some of which seemed to result in his estrangement from Laura, presumably at her initiative.

8720  
2317  
23167  
8720

We find Laura in 1870 and 1880 in her father's home in the Cape Fear Township of Chatham Co., NC. She was then age 6 and 16, respectively. On the 1900 census she was in Knighdale, Wake Co., NC, and shown as the mother of nine children, all living. A tenth child was born later. She lived and farmed in Johnston Co., NC, and died there. Her WILL was made about three months before her death. She mentions fifty acres of land and a lot in Smithfield, NC. She had operated a dairy and an orchard. In her WILL she specified by name which cow by name was to go to each of her children. The children were not all treated alike. Some of the land still remains in the family.

8720

An additional bonus from our interaction with Joy is that we have learned that her gggm was also an Upchurch. See details on Missing Link No. 19 in this issue of the UB for the remainder of that story.

2317

UB VOL 11, NO 2, P 61

APR 1990

<u>CLAN 1.</u> MOSES UPCHURCH	XID 1
On 7 DEC 89 Cousin Waylon Cline Upchurch called from home in El Paso, TX. He plans to retire in early 1990 and will be spending some time on collecting details for the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan to which he belongs.	3662 1/9
Mrs. Joy Kirks-Krueger of Raleigh, NC, and her husband have moved to Singapore for a tour of duty there with IBM. She was helping us sort out the Kirks family within the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. Her gggm was Mollie Upchurch (Missing Link No. 19). Cousin Roy White, Jr. of Salt Lake City, UT, had a go at establishing the parentage of this Mollie U. but so far we have not solved the puzzle (See <u>UB</u> , Vol. 11, No. 1). As a result of our Upchurch Lecture in Atlanta and especially because of leads provided by Mrs. William Clyde Shephard, Jr. we have made some excellent progress on collecting details on the descendants of Bennett A. Upchurch who was a son of Whitney Upchurch.	23170 1/11 5032 2844 2719 11
Mrs. Mike Lomas of Robert Lee, TX, writes to express her continued interest in the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. She is a gd of Jesse Sinclair Craddock, Sr.	12204 1/1109 11853
Vickie Barefoot-Gersh of Raleigh, NC, continues to work on identifying the father of her ancestor Hanson U. We continue to have a strong feeling that he is the son of Gillium U. and the son of Moses U. Head of Clan.	6,1

CLAN 1. MOSES UPCHURCH

XID

1

The last several months has brought an explosion of information in the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan and especially for the family of the late William Joseph U. He is the son of Bennett A. Upchurch and the grandson of Whitney Upchurch. Correspondents have included:

Mrs. Joseph Jackson Keyton (nee: Rosa Lee U.) of Raeford, NC. 2836

Mrs. William Clyde Shephard, Jr. (nee: Mary Roddenbery U.) of Thomasville, GA. 2844

Mrs. John Franklin Campbell (nee: Agnes Mae Johnson) of Raeford, NC. 24781

Mrs. Julian Samuel Johnson, Jr. (nee: Shirley Jean Clark) Raeford, NC. 25413

Miss Nancy Pugh of Thomasville, GA 24821

Mr. Joseph Stanley Upchurch, Jr. of Franklin, NC. 24833

Miss Ann Upchurch of Rock Hill, SC. 25399

The following notes relate to the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. Based on the birth dates of the children, the Courtney Upchurch family arrived in Dallas Co., AL about 1835. By 1840 Courtney U. had died and his widow, Cynthia (Richardson) U. was head of the household and at that time 6 of the 7 known children of Courtney U. were present. Missing was Calvin Burnett U. who would have been age 13 in 1840 (where is he? -Ed). He was in Walker Co., TX in 1860. On the 1850 census Cynthia is still head of household with 6 of 7 known children. Calvin Burnett U. is back but son Lawrence U. is absent because by this time he heads his own household.

In a 10 JUN 1990 letter, Cousin Emma Louise (U.) Priest of Charlottesville, VA helped us to identify a new family author. He is Michael Vincent Upchurch of the Moses U./Murray U. Subclan, the same subclan as applicable to Emmy Lou.



UB VOL 12, NO 1, PP 11 - 15

JAN 1991

CLAN 1. MOSES UPCHURCHXID  
1

Regarding the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan - 1/1109  
 Mrs. Beth Francis (nee: Marie Elizabeth Isbell) of 21261  
 Katy, TX, on 6 OCT 1990 provided the two following  
 references:

- A. McLennan Co., TX Cemetery Records  
 Vol. IV. Crawford Cem.  
 Courtney G. Upchurch  
 OCT 1828 - DEC 1915
- B. Index to Early McLennan Co., TX Deaths  
 Courtney G. Upchurch Age 87  
 d. DEC 1915 Crawford, TX 4-141.

A quick scan of the files indicated that this  
 Courtney G. U. should be a son of Courtney U., Head of - ,1109  
 the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. This is based on the 1/1109  
 name similarity, the birth date of C.G.U. and the fact  
 that other descendants of Courtney U. lived in McLennan 1109  
 Co., TX. This prompted us to attempt the construction  
 of a list of the children of Courtney U., a task not 1109  
 heretofore undertaken. Here is the result:

Annotated list of the possible children of  
 Courtney U., son of Moses U. - Head of Clan 1109/1  
 (Courtney U., b. ca 1794; md. 21 APR 1814, d. 1109  
 before 1850).

## Child Birth

<u>No.</u>	<u>Era</u>			
1	1815-1820	F	Child A - b. ca 1815 on 1820 census b. 1810-1820; not on 1830 census or beyond.	
2	1815-1820	F	Child B - b. ca 1817 on 1820 census b. 1810-1820; not on 1830 census or beyond.	
3	1815-1820	M	Child C - b. ca 1819 on 1830 census b. 1810-1820; on 1830 census b. 1815-1820; on 1840 census b. 1810-1820 not in MOT home 1850.	
4	1820-1825	F	Child D - b. ca 1821 on 1830 census b. 1820-1825; not in MOT home 1840 or beyond.	
5	1820-1825	M	Moses U., b. ca 1822 on 1830 census b. 1820-1825; on 1840 census b. 1820-1825; on 1850 census b. 1822.	1111

Child Birth			XID
<u>No.</u>	<u>Era</u>		
6	1820-1825 M	Child E - b. ca 1823 on 1830 census b. 1820-1825; not in MOT home 1840 or beyond.	
7	1820-1825 F	Child F - b. ca 1824 on 1830 census b. 1820-1825; not in MOT home in 1840 or beyond.	
8	1825-1830 M	Lawrence U., b. ca 1826 on 1830 census b. 1825-1830; not found on 1840 census, on 1850 census b. 1826.	13160
9	1825-1830 M	Calvin Burnett U., b. ca 1827 on 1830 census b. 1825-1830; on 1850 census b 1827.	1113
10	1825-1830 F	Child G - b. ca 1829 on 1830 census b. 1825-1830; on 1840 census b. 1825-1830; not in MOT home 1850.	
11	1830-1840 F	Delenia U. (Twin), b. 1832; not on 1840 census?; on 1850 census b. 1832.	1115
12	1830-1840 M	Sion U. (Twin), b. 1832; on 1840 census b. 1830-1835; on 1850 census b. 1832.	1114
13	1830-1840 F	Cynthia U., b. 1836; on 1840 census b. 1835-1840; on 1850 census b. 1835.	1116
14	1830-1840 M	James Courtney U., b. 1837; on 1840 census b. 1835-1840; on 1850 census b. 1837.	1117
Thus, we have a potential of 14 children for Courtney U. There seem to be up to seven children for whom we have no name as yet. We have identified them as Child A - G. The strange thing about this list is that the Courtney G. U. shown in references provided by Beth Francis does not seem to fit. Perhaps there is a good explanation. Copies of this list have been sent to our longtime cooperators, Mrs. Mike Lomas (nee: Mary Frances Wylie) of Robert Lee, TX, and Mrs. Charles N. Prothro (nee: Lois Elizabeth Perkins) of Wichita Falls, TX. They both have a keen interest in Cynthia U., the youngest daughter of Courtney U.			1109
			21261
			12204
			11592
			1116
			1109

XID

We are anxious to make more progress on this subclan and will welcome assistance on identifying the linkage for Courtney G. U. and on the list of children for Courtney U. 1109

Regarding Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan - This subclan 1/9  
has helped the Upchurch Family to once again establish a  
memorable footnote in American history. The matter  
concerns two turkeys, one Upchurch and President George Bush.  
Somehow the honor of supplying two Thanksgiving turkeys to  
the White House was bestowed upon the N. C. Turkey Industry.  
Our Cousin Wyatt Grey Upchurch, who is President of the 3664  
National Turkey Federation and the owner of Tar Heel  
Turkey Hatchery of Raeford, NC, had the honor of donating  
two of his prime birds and personally making the presenta-  
tion to President Bush in the Rose Garden on Wednesday,  
November 14, 1990. Pictures of the turkeys, Wyatt and the  
President appeared in various combinations in publications  
across the nation. Articles on the subject were clipped  
and sent to your editor by Mrs. James R. Wagner (nee: 7091  
Patsy Penny Horton); Robert William Upchurch, 6742  
Truex Newman Upchurch, Mrs. Janet House, and -,742  
Joseph Allen Upchurch. One of the birds had the honor 10679  
of appearing in the 26 NOV 1990 issue of the  
U. S. News & World Report but without the two human  
counterparts. Wyatt Grey U. is the son of Kurley 3664  
Ustrage U. of the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan. 3658,1/9  
We have not corresponded with Wyatt but have long 3664  
been in contact with his brother, Wayland Cline U. and 3662  
his first cousin Ouida Catherine U. 3656

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

- A. Information on the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan 8715  
 (Note that this is the only clan or subclan treated 1/11  
 in this section of the UB. - Ed.)

1. Comments Regarding The Evidence of Candis Upchurch 8715  
 Being The Daughter Of Whitney Upchurch 11

These comments are being provided by Robert Phillip Upchurch, Editor of the UPCHURCH BULLETIN, on June 30, 1991, at the request of Clayton Philip Mann, great-great-grandson of Candis (Upchurch) Mann. The request was made in a letter dated June 25, 1991 from CPM to RPU. 8787 8715

The evidence for Candis U. being the dau of Whitney U. is altogether circumstantial. We must start with the fact that numerous existing records show that she spent her life on the border of Wake Co., NC, and Chatham Co., NC. More specifics in this regard could be cited but for now let us take this location for her existence as a fact. A marriage bond for John Thomas Mann and Candis U. was issued in Wake Co., NC, on 19 DEC 1847. This appears to be the first time her name was publicly recorded. Subsequent census records show her to have been born ca 1818. 8715,11 8717,8715

Years of research have documented that all Upchurches born on the Wake/Chatham border in the 1800-1850 era descend from Nathan U. I, or Moses U., these two brothers having arrived on the Wake/Chatham border ca 1802 from the Moccasin Creek area of Franklin Co., NC. Candis U. was born too late to have been a child of Moses U. or Nathan U. I, and the ages are such that a child born ca 1818 would almost certainly have been a grandchild of Moses U. or of Nathan U. I. 78,1 8715 1,78 1,78

(Note that the John U. III Clan was represented on the Wake/Chatham border in Chatham Co. before 1800. John U. III died intestate in the Shaddock Creek area of Chatham Co., ca 1795, leaving three sons and several dau. The sons moved out of the area between their father's death and about 1815 and the prospect of Candis U. being a descendant of John U. III is currently discounted). 157 157 8715 157

Nathan U. I had five sons among whom one could search for the father of Candis U., b. ca 1818: 78 8715

1. Burtis U. He had nine well identified sons with no room on the census records for a dau, b. ca 1818. 80



- |   |                      |
|---|----------------------|
|   | XID                  |
| 2. Gilbert U. (GGF of the writer). He was b. 1792 and his wife, Lucretia Mills was b. 1802. No marriage license has been found but their presumed first child was b. 19 JUL 1820. There are two, as yet unidentified dau. of this couple but no evidence that they were born before 19 JUL 1820. Gilbert's family is not found on the 1830 census. On 1840 census no dau., b. 1818 is listed. | 82<br>2852<br><br>82 |
| 3. Hubbard U. He did not marry until 24 OCT 1822.   | 83                   |
| 4. Acril U. He did not marry until 30 MAR 1833.   | 84                   |
| 5. Nathan U. II. He had five known children born between 1825 and 1830.   | 85                   |

Moses U. had six sons among whom one could search for the father of Candis U., b. ca 1818: 1 8715

- |   |                              |
|---|------------------------------|
| 1. Gillium U. He is head of a household on the 1820 census in Chatham Co., NC with a female <10 present. However, for the 1830 census his household does not include a female in the age bracket 10-15 as would be required for Candis U., b. ca 1818.  | 6<br><br>8715                |
| 2. Ruffin U. He did indeed have two dau. born of his first mg in the period 1815-1820, names unknown. However, the census records for 1830 onward reflect his second mg and children of his first mg, especially dau, are difficult to track. One of the dau, b. 1815-1820 could have been Candis U., b. ca 1818.   | 9<br><br>8715                |
| 3. Whitney U. He md 3 JAN 1811 and commenced having children on a regular schedule. Details for the Whitney U. family have not been located on the 1820 census. However, there is a slot for a female 10-15 years old with him on the 1830 Wake Co. census (Candis would have been age 12) and there is a slot for a female 20-30 years old with him on the 1840 Wake Co. census (Candis would have been age 22). Note that Candis did not marry until 1847, at age 29. | 11<br><br>11<br>8715<br>8715 |
| 4. Sims U., b. 1808, hence would not have had a dau, b. ca 1818.  | 17                           |
| 5. Courtney U. He md 1814 in Chatham Co., NC and on the 1820 Chatham Co. census had two dau 0-10 years old. However, ten years later on the 1830 census, his household had no slot for a dau 10-20 years old, hence no slot for a dau b. 1818. Also, by 1835 Courtney U. had moved his entire family to Alabama.  | 1109<br><br>1109             |

On the basis of the above analysis, it is concluded that Candis U., b. ca 1818, is most likely the dau of Whitney U. She fits his household better and more consistently than any other. If one had to make second choices, the next best candidates for her father would be 8715 11

Gillium U. or Ruffin U., both sons of Moses U. It seems quite unlikely that Candis U. is a dau of one of the sons of Nathan U. I. XID  
6,9,1  
8715  
78

In performing the above analysis, the prospect that Candis U. could be a child born out-of-wedlock to a son or a dau of Moses U., or Nathan U. I, is ignored. 8715  
1,78  
Although such could be the case, the data presently available is not adequate to allow an analysis.

Additional data on the children and grandchildren of Moses U. and Nathan U. I continues to become available, and that available is being organized in a more useful form. Furthermore, data from more recent generations continues to allow for more precise Master Outlines to be formulated for the Moses U. and Nathan U. I Clans. All of these thrusts will provide, over time, for the above analysis to be adjusted to a more firm basis. For the present, Candis U. will continue to be carried on the Upchurch Family Rolls as a dau of Whitney U. In the meantime, additions and corrections to our data base on these clans are invited. 1,78  
  
1,78  
8715  
11

Robert Phillip Upchurch, Editor  
UPCHURCH BULLETIN  
June 30, 1991

2. Response of Clayton Philip Mann to the above comments based on his letter of 10 JUL 1991 to RPU. 8787

"Dear Cousin Phil,

Thank you so much for the written summary you sent me on the subject of Candis Upchurch Mann and Whitney Upchurch. It was all I had hoped for and more. I'm optimistic that one day we'll discover even more evidence that indicated Candis was Whitney's daughter. .... I agree wholeheartedly that given the information on Candis and Whitney that is known to date, it definitely appears she is his daughter. It is very nice to now have your succinct summary regarding this relationship. ....

Sincerely,

Clayton P. Mann".

CLAN 1. MOSES UPCHURCHXID  
1

In a letter dated October 23, 1992, our cousin Dr. David Thomas Upchurch of Oak Ridge, TN, sent in details on a book "Chancellorsville 1863 - The Souls Of The Brave" by Ernest B. Furgurson, published by Alfred A. Knopf, New York 1992. The dedication page reads as follows:

5614

"To

Robert Daniel Ferguson  
1st Sgt., Co. 1, 53rd Virginia Infantry  
Wounded At Five Forks, April 1, 1865

Jesse Levi Furgurson  
2nd Lt., Co., C, 32nd North Carolina Infantry  
Wounded At Petersburg, April 2, 1865

Michael Decatur Lawrence Harris  
1st Sgt., Co. C, 32nd North Carolina Infantry  
Wounded At Fort Stedman, March 25, 1865

Thomas Upchurch  
Private, Co. G, 7th North Carolina Infantry  
Captured At Gettysburg, July 3, 1863  
Died At Fort Delaware, October 1863

-and to their childre,  
and their children's children  
who are my parents"

Research into our Upchurch files reveal that this title page provides a unique bit of information. We are grateful for this input and hope that other family members will send in items of possible interest of whatever kind. Each item provides one more piece of the puzzle. My letter of appreciation to Cousin Tom reads as follows:

"22 NOV 1992

Dr. D. Thomas Upchurch  
Oak Ridge, TN

Dear Tom:

Thanks for your letter of 23 OCT 1992 and for the details on the book about Chancellorsville. I have just found time to look into the matter. If I understand

correctly the four males to whom the book is dedicated are the four Greatgreatgrandfathers of the author Ernest B. Fugurson. Of these five individuals only Thomas U. surfaced in my records. My records match perfectly with the war record shown for Thomas U. in the dedication. He is XID 3421, the son of Ruffin U. & the gs of Moses U., Head of Clan. Thomas U. was a 2nd Cousin of my Grandfather Bartley Jefferson U. who was at Gettysburg also. Enclosed is a copy of the Master Outline sheet for Thomas U. He had two daughters, one of whom must be a grandmother of the author of the book. I am able to trace these females up to the 1870 & 1880 census in Wake Co., NC but then lose them. If your friend who is the Civil War buff has an address or phone number for Ernest B. Furgurson I would be willing to contact him to see if more of the story can be made to unfold.

I trust you and your family are doing well. Let us know if you plan another trip to Tucson. This fall has been exceptionally busy for me but I think I now see the light at the end of the tunnel.

Thanks again for sending the Thomas Upchurch material.

Sincerely yours,

Phil Upchurch  
(Robert Phillip Upchurch)"



## A. THE WILL OF MURRAY UPCHURCH

XID  
14

"I Murry Upchurch of the County of Chatham and State of North Carolina being of sound mind and memory, but considering the uncertainty of my earthly existence, do make and declare this my last will & testament in manner & form following that is to say:

First - That my executor (hereinafter named, shall provide for my body a decent burial, suitable to the wishes of my relations & friends, and pay all funeral expences, together with my just debts howsoever & to whomsoever owing, out of the moneys that may first come into his hands as a part or parcel of my estate.

Item. I give & devise to my beloved wife Salie - seventy-five acres of land including the homestead joining the lands of Sims, Upchurch; Welthy, Elkins; & H. Metton to have & to hold so long as she may live on it or her widowhood one beadsitd, bead & furniture (her choise, one wheel & cards, cooking utentials, one year provision to be set apart & given to her by my executor.

Item.- I give & devise to my daughter Clary, one cow & calf, one walnut folding table, one side saddle, this I want to give to my sid daughter Clary in order to make her up even with my other children, to have & to hold forever.

Item. - I give & devise to my son Paschal's children one note that I hold against my said son Paschal in full of there part of my estate.

Item. - I give & devise to my daughter Elizabeth, Laurence children first - that one hundred Dollars, be taken from there part & then for them to shear alike with my other children.

Item. - I give & devise to my son Isham, the sum of one Dollar as his full share of my estate to have & to hold forever.

Item. - It is my will that twenty-five dollars be taken out of my daughter Rashal children part & then for them to share equal with the rest.

Item. - It is my will that my executor rent my land until he in his Judgment shall see fit to sell it for cash or credit & that he shall sell all of my personal property and devide it equally between my daughters Martha, Elizabeth children, Emaley, Rachal children, Mary & Clary.

XID

Item. - & Lastly - I do hereby constitute & appoint Aderson Council my lawful executor to all intents & purposes to execute this my last will & testament according to the true intent and meaning of the same & every part & clause thereof hereby revoking and declaring utterly void all other wills or testaments by me made heretofore. In witness whereof I the said Murry Upchurch, do set my hand & seal this the 6th Day of April 1870.

Murry Upchurch (Seal)

Signed, sealed, published, declared, by the said Murry Upchurch to be his last will & testament in the presence of us who at his request & in his presence do subscribe our names as witness thereto

E. N. Fearrington  
C. R. Scott"

B. COMMENTARY ON THE WILL OF MURRAY UPCHURCH 14

Murray U. was a son of Moses U., Head of Clan 14,1  
No. 1. Thus, Murray U. is head of the Moses U./ 14,1/  
Murray U. Subclan. Although the spelling Murry 14  
is used in the will we have long used the spelling  
Murray based on the total amount of evidence available.

Murray U. was b. 1 NOV 1797 (Franklin Co., NC) 14  
and about 1803 moved with his parents to the eastern  
border of Chatham Co., NC where he grew to adulthood,  
married (three times), raised a family of ten children,  
died and was buried. We continue to try to find his  
actual burial site. He was predeceased by his first  
wife, Nancy (Scott) U. in 1864 and by his second wife, 15  
Nancy E. (Dodd)(Carson) U. in 1869. He married for 4111  
the third time on 1 MAR 1870 to Sallie Temples. 4112  
His third marriage most likely prompted the will  
published above which was written on 6 APR 1870. He  
died 19 FEB 1872.

The will mentions his third wife "Salie". We do 4112  
not know the exact location of the 75 acres he gave  
her. It adjoined lands of Sims U., a brother of 17  
Murray U. 14

Cleary U. refers to his youngest dau who md. 37  
Vernon Rigsbee. No children of this couple have been 38  
found.

Paschal refers to his sixth child Paschal B. U. 30  
who was killed in the Civil War leaving a widow and

XID

four small children. We have recently had contact  
with a descendant of Pascal; namely, Harold  
Vernon Nelson, Jr. 29508

Elizabeth refers to his second child Elizabeth  
U. who married Haywood "Pat" Lawrence. No children  
of this couple have been found. 23 24

Isham refers to his third child Isham Sims U. 25  
about whom we have a large amount of detail, thanks  
to the late Etta Belle (Lewter) West and her Upchurch  
book.

Rashal refers to his eighth child Rachel U. who 33  
married Stephen Scroble and James Penny. She had 34,7086  
two children from each marriage.

In the penultimate paragraph, Murray again 14  
mentions his daughters Clary, Elizabeth, and Rachel.  
To these already mentioned dau he adds Martha (his  
oldest child), Emaley (child no. five), and Mary (child  
no. nine). Martha U. md. Simeon Yates. Children 21,22  
have not been located. Emaley is Emily Catherine 28  
U. "Emm" who married Addison Council who had five 29  
children. Mary is Mary Ann U. who md. Phillip N. 35,63  
Foushee for whom no children have been located.

Not mentioned in the will are:

- . John H. U., fourth child, about whom we know 27  
little.
- . Farrington U., seventh child, about whom 32  
we know little.

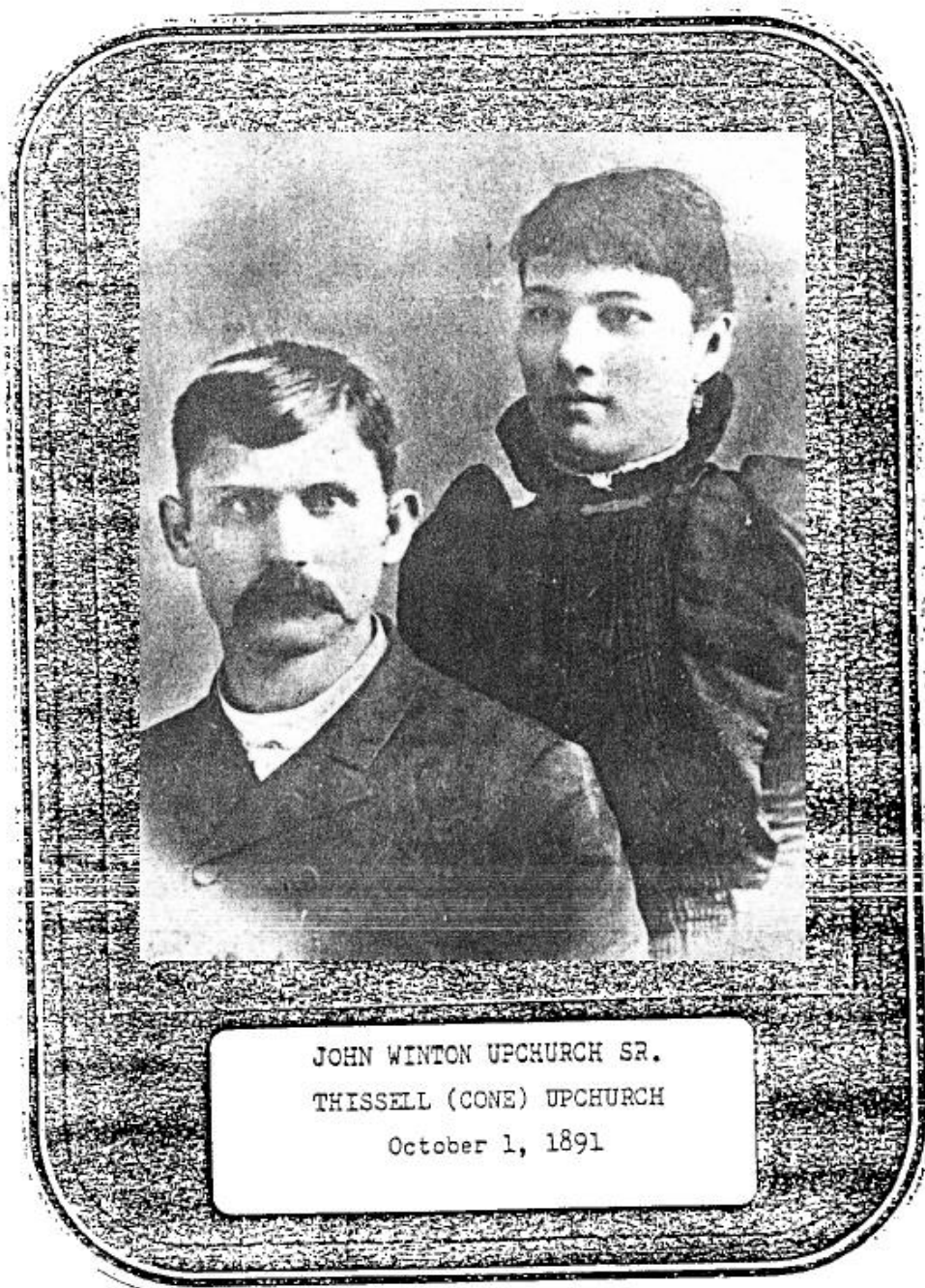
These two unmentioned sons would have been of the right  
age to have died in the Civil War. In any case, we  
presume they died before their father and most likely  
that they died in the Civil War or of natural causes  
prior to the war.

Interested parties are invited to help amplify  
the details about the family of Murray U. 14



JOHN WINTON UPCHURCH, SR. AND HIS 2ND WIFE  
nee: THISSELL CONE OF THE  
MOSES U./RUFFIN U. SUBCLAN

XID  
22568  
22570  
1/9





	XID
We are indebted to Cousin Calvin Kelly U. of Las Vegas, NV, who provided this picture of his grandparents taken on their wedding day, 1 OCT 1891.	22649
John Winton U., Sr. had been married earlier to Annabell Smith by whom he had one child,	22568
South Wood U., Sr., b. 15 JUL 1882 (Hampton Co., SC).	22569
The second marriage produced six children.	22572
 John Winton U., Sr., b. 15 JUN 1858 (High Falls, NC), d. 1 SEP 1907 (Stilson, Bulloch Co., GA)(Bur. Old Fellowship Baptist Church, Stilson, GA), md. 1 OCT 1891 Thissell Cone, b. 15 OCT 1870 (Bulloch Co., GA), d. 14 APR 1928 (Brooklet, GA)(Bur. AS HUS).	22568
 John Winton U., Sr. was one of seven known children of Kelly F. U., b. ca 1817 (NC). Kelly F. U. was the son of Ruffin U. and the grandson of Moses U., Head of Upchurch Clan No. 1. This family lived on the border of Wake and Chatham Counties in NC where Moses U. arrived about 1802. Kelly F. U. was md. in 1837 in Chatham Co., NC but left the home grounds for several other sequential locations. He was in High Falls, NC when John Winton U., Sr. was born.	22568
Calvin Kelly U. reports that his GF left High Falls, NC as a teenager and went to GA. Apparently John Winton U., Sr. and his brother, George A. U., went to GA together. One reads between the lines that this move to GA had somewhat of the hint of escaping from a structured environment. At the time of his death John Winton U., Sr. is reported to have been Postmaster at Stilson, GA.	22649
	22568
	22548
	22568
	22548
	22568
	22568
	22540
	9,1
	1
	22540
	22568
	22568
	22548
	22568
	22540
	1/9

UB VOL 15, NO 3, P 91

JUL 1994

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH).XID  
1

Sometime ago a copy of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan Master Outline with all continuation sections was sent to our Cousin Clyde U. in Mesa, AZ. He called on 1 JUL 94 to say that he has now entered all the data into a computer. He will be providing the editor of the UB a hard copy of this database. Clyde has also agreed to enter the remaining subclans in the Moses U. Clan into a computer format and the appropriate Master Outline will be sent to him over a period of months. He has agreed to submit his computer versions of these Upchurch records to the LDS records center in Salt Lake City, UT. I am sure Clyde would be happy to share his computerized records with others who are interested in the Moses U. Clan. Clyde and his wife, Joy, have made tentative plans to visit Michael Enterprises Headquarters in Tucson, AZ, in the next few months. We look forward to a pleasant review of mutual interests. Clyde and your editor were both raised in Wake Co., NC.

1/11

3088

1

UB, VOL 17, NO 1, P 5

JAN 1996

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

Clan 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

On February 6 and 7, 1996, your editor was a guest in the home of Cousin Clyde Upchurch in Mesa, AZ. We visited in great detail about the application of computers to family history. Clyde is making great progress in entering all of our Upchurch data into a computer data base. He has now hired a person to help with this task. He has completed entering all available data for the Moses U. Clan and the Nathan U. I Clan. We are preparing to send him a copy of the Richard U. III Clan. To accommodate the visit, Clyde made the great sacrifice of giving up his tickets to see a Phoenix SUNS (Charles Barkley fame)/Chicago BULLS (Michael Jordan fame) professional basketball game. Clyde's son and Clyde's wife, Josephine, were able to enjoy the use of the tickets.

3088

We have now taken out membership in the Chatham Co., NC Historical Society. In due course this should provide some insight for the Moses U. Clan, as Moses lived in Chatham Co., NC for about 50 years, starting about 1804. Some of his descendants are still there. John U. III, the Head of Upchurch Clan 14, died intestate in Chatham Co., NC in 1795. Although Nathan U. I (Head of Upchurch Clan 3) lived in Wake Co., NC, a number of his descendants were on the Chatham Co. scene; as for example, at the Mt. Pisgah Baptist Church. More recently Cousin George Henry Andrews, Sr. was High Sheriff of Chatham Co., NC, from 1932 to 1949. He was the husband of your editor's first cousin - nee: Beatrice Roe Martin. Many bits of Upchurch history remain to be discovered in Chatham Co., NC.

157

2671

2667

UB, VOL 17, NO 3, P 107

JUL 1996

## CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

XID  
1

Moses U. had a son Courtney U. who md. In 1814 in Chatham Co., NC Cynthia Richardson. This couple had fourteen children, most of whom were born in Chatham County, NC prior to the time the family moved to Dallas Co., AL, about 1835. There at least two of the fourteen were born, including the youngest child, James Courtney U. James has been an elusive family member but details on him have recently been uncovered. He served in the South in the Civil War and survived having enlisted in Texas. We now know that he was the father of the Rev. James T. U. who was born 29 OCT 1879 (Bosqueville, McLennan Co., TX). This Upchurch minister was very active in Texas in helping young downtrodden girls, some of whom had gotten into trouble. We have a substantial body of information about the Berachah Home which Rev. Upchurch created in Arlington, TX in the early years of this century to support young unfortunate women. This is a powerful story about a member of our Upchurch family. It seems reasonable to place him among the top ten most outstanding American Upchurch family members. Preparations are being made to report more fully the story of Rev. James T. Upchurch.

1,1109

1110

1117

39378

39378

XID

1

CLAN 1. (Moses Upchurch)

Information continues to surface about the James Courtney U. line in the 1117  
 Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. Reference to this line has appeared in UB, 1/1109  
 Vol. 17, No. 2 (APR) 1996, page 55, 57 and No. 3 (JUL) 1996, page 107. In the  
 last several months we have had an intensive interaction with William Lee 39902  
 Pattillos "Bill" who is an great grandson of James Courtney U. Bill and 1117,39902  
 his wife, Mary (nee: Mary Faith Northcutt) are avid and effective genealogists 39907  
 and have been making progress in solving some puzzles associated with the  
 James Courtney U. line. This interaction resulted in Mary and Bill 1117,39907,39902  
 paying a visit to your editor in Lake St. Louis, MO, on 23 OCT 1996.  
 John Northcutt, a brother of Mary, was along on this visit. He lives in  
 Farmington, MO, and just happens to be acquainted with the family of our  
 daughter-in-law, Mrs. Barrett Phillip U. (nee: Diane Danieley). It can be a  
 small world.

Bill Pattillos is the son of Archie William Pattillos, the only child of 39902,39901  
 Annie M. U., daughter of James Courtney U. Annie was is the sister 39376,1117,39376  
 of the Rev. James T. U., who was so active in helping needy young girls 39378  
 in Texas in the 1890-1940 era. We hope to have a more comprehensive  
 report on Rev. Upchurch in due course. Bill Pattillos grew up in Arlington, 39378,39902  
 TX quite close to the site where Rev. Upchurch operated his Berachah Home  
 for unwed mothers. Bill remembers visiting the Berachah homesite as a child,  
 but only years later learned that his grandmother, Annie M. (U.) Pattillos, had 39376  
 been buried there in 1917, some five years before Bill was born.

Bill continues to work on shedding light on his Upchurch ancestry, 39902  
 giving special attention to the 1870 census for McLennan Co., TX which  
 lists James U., age 31, wife Nancy, age 22, and Cynthia, age 3. This census  
 record is a good starting point, but involves some puzzles. We are convinced  
 the James U., age 31, is in fact James Courtney U., Civil War veteran. 1117  
 Bill has learned that his wife Nancy married three times and that James 39902,-,1117  
 was her second husband. She had six children. One of these was James T. U 39378  
 (later Reverend), b. 29 OCT 1870 (after the 1870 census was taken). (UB,  
 Vol. 17, No. 3 (JUL) 1996, page 107 incorrectly lists his birth as 29 OCT 1879).  
 Her third marriage was on 28 JUL 1878 to an older gentleman by the name of



XID

David Ellis. From this we presume James Courtney U. died before 28 JUL 1878, or otherwise disappeared from the scene. Nancy and David had no children. The question remains as to how many of her six children were fathered by each of her first two husbands. A further puzzle is why Annie M. U. was not listed on the 1870 census reported above. She would have been 3 years of age. Since a daughter Cynthia, age 3, was listed, one wonders if Cynthia and Annie were one and the same. While not helping to solve this puzzle, it does seem plausible that James Courtney U. named a daughter Cynthia after his mother who was nee: Cynthia Richardson. James Courtney U. also had a sister named Cynthia, so the name was highly respected in the family.

More details on the James Courtney U. line are available to be reported and analysis on this line deserves much more attention. We are grateful to Bill and Mary for their interest, friendship, and dedication.

UB VOL 18, NO. 2, P 57

APRIL 1997

XID  
1CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)

More input is arriving on the James Courtney U. Line in the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. Cousin Bill Pattillos, a great grandson of James Courtney U., has now brought into our circle of correspondents Mrs. Dexter Loraine Betts, nee: Dorthy Nelle U., another great grandchild of James Courtney U. She is helping to accumulate information on her grandfather, James T. U., the famous Texas minister. We shall soon have enough material for a major article on his life's work and on his family. Cousin Dorthy has already supplied the picture of Rev. and Mrs. James T. U. that will accompany the article. In the meantime, Cousin Bill Pattillos has supplied detailed information and mementos of a 1957 voyage he and his wife, Mary, took on the Queen Mary. On the trip Bill celebrated his 35<sup>th</sup> birthday. He and Mary have many fond memories of the trip.

THE REV. JAMES TONY UPCHURCH  
 (SON OF JAMES COURTNEY U. OF THE  
 MOSES U./COURTNEY U. SUBCLAN) AND  
 WIFE, nee: MARGARET MAE ADAMS

XID  
 39378  
 1117  
 1/1109  
 39379



About 1981 word reached your editor that a certain J. T. Upchurch operated a home for unwed mothers around the turn of the century in what is today Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX. It took 15 years of off and on investigation to learn the full story of The Rev. Upchurch, his work and his linkage to the Upchurch family.

The Rev. Upchurch was a great man and did a great work in the 1890-1950 era, the details of which are the principle subject of this issue of the UB. Yet by 1975 the record of his life and work had all but faded from existence. This was soon to change due to Professor of Architecture, R. Gene Brooks, and two of his students at the University of Texas at Arlington. The students were assigned the task of surveying the University Campus. This led to the discovery of an all but abandoned cemetery on the campus. The 22 FEB 1981 issue of the Fort Worth Star Telegram reports on an interview with the Professor and his students as follows:

"I became interested because of the uniqueness of the cemetery - the markers and the lack of last names" Brooks said. "I had never seen a cemetery with this particular focus". Buried in the cemetery are young mothers who died in childbirth, stillborn babies, home residents

who died during a measles epidemic and a number of home workers and their children. One of the students said, "We initially started by trying to find out why the cemetery was there. Then it turned out to be a good story that needed to be documented." In doing research and preparing a paper the students and their professor learned much not only about the home and cemetery, but also about its founder, (Rev. Upchurch)" The students, Lynn Manion and Jan Dolph went on to issue a 14 page report dated December 1979 and entitled "A Short History Of The Berachah Home And Berachah Cemetery - Arlington, TX". This report brings into bold relief the life of The Rev. James T. Upchurch and how he established the Berachah Home for Unwed Mothers on what is today a part of the University of Texas at Arlington Campus between Dallas and Fort Worth. The newspaper article recounts the essence of the report and tells how the students work led to the establishment of an historical monument. The article shows a picture of Allie Mae Gilmore, daughter of The Rev. Upchurch, and tells of her involvement with the home. The monument reads as follows:

"SITE OF  
BERACHAH HOME AND CEMETERY

THE BERACHAH RESCUE SOCIETY WAS  
ORGANIZED AT WACO IN 1894 BY THE  
REV. J. T. UPCHURCH (B. 1870) FOR THE  
PROTECTION OF HOMELESS GIRLS AND  
UNWED MOTHERS. NINE YEARS LATER  
HE OPENED THE BERACHAH INDUSTRIAL  
HOME AT THIS SITE. TEN BUILDINGS  
WERE LOCATED HERE, INCLUDING A  
PRINT SHOP FOR PUBLICATION OF THE  
"PURITY JOURNAL". THE CEMETERY,  
WHICH CONTAINS MORE THAN EIGHTY  
GRAVES, WAS FIRST USED IN 1904 FOR  
THE BURIAL OF EUNICE WILLIAMS, ONE  
OF THE RESIDENTS. THE HOME CLOSED  
IN 1935, BUT THE SITE WAS USED  
UNTIL 1942 AS AN ORPHANAGE RUN  
BY UPCHURCH'S DAUGHTER ALLIE MAE  
AND HER HUSBAND FRANK WIESE.  
(1981)"

In a 24 NOV 1981 letter Mr. Dank Utley of the Texas Historical Commission kindly responded to a request from your editor and provided a copy of the students report and other fragmentary information. This led to correspondence with additional individuals, some of whom had connections with the Berachah Home and provided some insights. The one thing that did not surface was how The Rev. Upchurch was connected to the Upchurch family. Not even the name of his father was learned.

Then in April of 1996 your editor and his wife visited the Berachah Cemetery in Arlington, TX and searched for records pertaining to The Rev. Upchurch in Waco, McLennan Co., TX (See UB, Vol. 17, No. 2 (April) 1996 pgs 55 and 59).

Sometime in MAY 1996, with more sorting of records I was able to establish the ancestral line of The Rev. Upchurch. Then on 6 JUN 1996 a letter arrived from Cousin William "Bill" Lee Pattillos of Sacramento, CA. He wrote "I obtained your name and address from the UPCHURCH BULLETIN on the Internet. I am trying to obtain information on the Upchurch side of my family. Unfortunately, I know very little about them at this point. Bill reported that his grandmother, Mrs. J. Doak Pattillo (nee: Annie Mae U.) was the sister of the The Rev. James T. Upchurch. Bill and I have had a wonderful series of exchanges on family history. He and his wife, Mary Northcutt Pattillos, and her brother, John Northcutt, visited us in Lake St. Louis and later we visited with them at the Northcutt homestead in Washington Co., MO. Bill and Mary have aggressively pursued information on our shared heritage. He was born and lived for quite a few years a few blocks from the Berachah Cemetery without realizing that his Grandmother Annie was buried there.

Later Bill put me in touch with Mrs. Dexter Loraine Betts (nee: Dorthy Marie Upchurch), a granddaughter of The Rev. James T. Upchurch. Dorthy has provided much additional information on her family and especially on her grandfather The Rev. Upchurch, for whom she has an exceptional regard. Among the documents provided is a booklet she prepared entitled "Berachah - The Life and Work of J. T. and Maggie Upchurch" dated 7 APR 1993 by Dorthy Upchurch Betts. This account presents a number of photographs and much information not otherwise available. Dorthy and your editor have had several very useful phone conversations. She heard The Rev. Upchurch preach many times. She felt him to be a captivating but serious speaker. She said in every sermon he made her feel as if she should give herself to God all over again. In dealing with the family and with others on a daily basis he was a cheerful person of good humor. Still, he had high and rigid standards which he applied to family, associates, charges, and redeemed souls alike. Dorthy was amazed that her grandfather had such an outstanding grasp of the writing and speaking of the English language without the benefit of a formal education.

It is a sense of great satisfaction to have "closed the circle" on The Rev. James Tony Upchurch. We now know how he fits into our Upchurch family and we know much about how this man of the people came to achieve great success in helping those less fortunate. His beloved Berachah Home Site with ten useful buildings is now evidenced only by an out-of-the way cemetery and a lone historic marker. Yet, his documented life and work lives on in the Archives and in a number of publications which lift him and his work up as an example to be emulated. The Rev. James Tony Upchurch was small in stature but in the annals of Upchurch family history he is one of our giants.

Additional notations about The Rev. Upchurch are as follows:



- . Among his writings was a novelette entitled "Behind The Scarlet Mask" - based on a composite of the girls he had helped.
- . An Honorary Doctor of Social Studies was bestowed upon him by The Bethany Nazarene College at Bethany, OK.
- . His middle name of "TONY" seems unlikely but appears to be correct. The TX death records show it as "TOREY".
- . A picture of the first building constructed at the Berachah Home in Arlington, TX, is shown below:



BERACHAH INDUSTRIAL HOME.

- . The Berachah Home name is drawn from the Bible - 2 Chronicles, 20:26 - Berachah being Hebrew for "Blessing".  
 "On the fourth day they assembled in the Valley of Barachah, for there they blessed the Lord, therefore that place has been called the Valley of Berachah to this day."
- . The Berachah Home in Arlington, TX, grew to 67 acres and 10 buildings valued at \$197,042 in 1932.
- . On the eve of their wedding in November 1892, James Tony Upchurch wrote to his wife-to-be the following:  
 "Maggie Dear:

In thinking over and about marriage, it is indeed a voyage over an unknown sea that we are willing to venture upon because of present and anticipated pleasures. I have been much in prayer and feel that you are the one that God has chosen as my companion on this voyage. I hope to ever bear that in mind and to act in harmony with that realization. What our voyage will be, none but God knows. If we keep Him with us it will be a marvelous voyage.

Lovingly,  
 Jimmie".

XID

CLAN 1. MOSES UPCHURCH

1

## A. The Reverend James Tony Upchurch - A Leader In The Rescue Movement.

The story of how The Rev. James T. U. "Jimmie" came to our attention is told in the photograph section of this issue of the UB. We shall now tell about his life's work and how it unfolded.

Jimmie was born in 1870 in the area of Waco., TX. His father died when Jimmie was about 3 years old, and the household was dispersed until the mother, Nancy Ann, could find a job. She remarried in 1878, at age 36, to an older man, age 58, named David H. Ellis. It is clear that the family had few material possessions and that body and soul were maintained with difficulty. Nothing is known about the education of Jimmie except to say it was clear that at best he had only a few years of rudimentary elementary education. This is a surprise in view of his later accomplishments and especially because of his superb writing and speaking ability demonstrated in adulthood. Even his granddaughter, Dorthy U. Betts, who knew him well, is at a loss to explain how he went from an unschooled youth to an effective scholar. No doubt, we must attribute this to him being a self-taught person and to his inherited abilities.

While we understand Jimmie did not grow up in a "Godly" home, he did see his mother and step-father as moral role models.

As a pre-teen/teenager, Jimmie delivered newspapers in Waco, TX. On his rounds and in his "riotous" youth he became aware of the plight of downtrodden members of the community. In a sudden revelation he was converted and became a dutiful church member. More than this, he developed in a few short years a compelling desire to help the less fortunate. At first this took the form of speaking to the inmates of prisons in the Waco area. Then he became impressed with the unfairness of life as related to females who were treated as second-class citizens, especially as related to sexual relationships. This became a theme which was to undergird his future activities and to place him in the forefront of the "Rescue" movement in the 1890-1950 era.

We can define four cardinal elements in the life of Jimmie as a youth and as a young man as follows:

- . He saw first hand the harshness of life in the Waco, TX area and especially as related to females.

- . He experienced a conversion in listening to the words of God and became a new focused, dedicated person.
- . He married a compatible, religiously supportive wife and gained a lifelong supportive father-in-law.
- . He started, as a young man, the perfecting process of developing writing and speaking skills and of enlisting the help of others in the pursuit of serving those less fortunate.

One can only understand the life and work of Jimmie Upchurch by assuming his actions and accomplishments were based on his profound belief in the Almighty which gave young Upchurch the strength, motivation, and power to achieve greatness. If he were living today we would, no doubt, find him as a leader in a crusade for the support of the common good.

As early as 1894, Jimmie has selected the plight of females in society as the focus of his life's work. This embraced a number of elements. He felt that there was gross unfairness in the ability of men to take advantage of women and then to cast them aside. This included married couples, but his real emphasis was to be on the societal situation which allowed women and their children born out-of-wedlock to be stigmatized. He felt that the men involved went on to effective roles in society, while the females and the resulting children were left to suffer and be held up as unworthy. He felt that there was no such thing as an illegitimate child and crusaded to have the relevant Texas laws changed. He felt that society winked at brothels and even supported them through legal and illegal means.

In the 1890s, young Jimmie and his wife aggressively tended to the plight of females in desperate circumstances in the Waco, TX area. A segment of the Waco population and some segments of the Methodist Church, to which Jimmie and his wife, Maggie, belonged, had reservations about this forceful young man and his crusade. Some religious people did not want to have the "sinners" in their congregation. Some business leaders had their own dark reasons for wanting the "red light" districts. It appears this pressure made it more comfortable for the young minister to relocate to the area of Dallas, TX. Before leaving Waco he had already started collecting funds to develop a home for unwed mothers. There are some indications that he started an official "Society" for this purpose in Waco, but it is also clear that this effort would have to succeed in another area - which it did. One thing we learn from this Waco experience is that Jimmie not only had the ability to deliver a powerful spoken message, he understood that resources were required to do good and he developed a talent for getting people to give money to his causes.



We have not learned where James T. U. was ordained. His wife maintained her Methodist Church membership until very late in life and Jimmie throughout accompanied her to Methodist services on Sunday nights. Having, in one sense, been driven from the Methodist Church, the young minister became a leader in the "holiness" movement in Texas and even in a greater area. The broader "holiness" movement grew out of the efforts of John Wesley and his associates. It is from this movement that the Methodist Church itself arose. The Holiness Church, with several name variations, is a more "fundamental" branch of this John Wesley initiative. Note that Jimmie and his wife named a son James Wesley U. (XID 39382). (There are no less than ten Upchurch males with the name John Wesley U.). The holiness movement in which Jimmie was a leader was, along with several other similar thrusts, amalgamated into the present day Church of the Nazarene. When Jimmie moved to Dallas he formed a church which became known as the Dallas Nazarene Church and of which Jimmie is officially recognized as the founder.

While living in Dallas, Jimmie continued his work with downtrodden females and maintained some contact with the Waco area. In 1901 he decided that the area of Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX, was the best spot for a major facility for homeless girls and mothers. His father-in-law provided the financial basis for the first purchase of land. Jimmie took it from there, and in two decades had a ten building facility, free of debt, officially known as the BERACHAH INDUSTRIAL HOME.

The "Home" was distinctive in that mothers were required to keep their children. Home residents were expected to work in the compound which had a supporting horticulture venture and a handkerchief factory - thus lending the "industrial" part of the name of the home.

The "Home" became a quasi venture of the Church of the Nazarene from which it received support and encouragement. Still, the "Home" was a free standing legal entity with its own Board. But reading between the lines, one concludes that the "Home" was the length and breadth of the shadow of the The Rev. James Tony Upchurch - to borrow a phrase from years gone by. The Nazarenes had another such home at Mt. Pilot, TX, where the policy was that the expectant mother would be sustained but must give up her newborn child for adoption. These contrasting policies between the two homes were apparently within the acceptable charitable bounds of this church.

Life at the Berachah Home was lived under strict rules, some of which would seem archaic to us today. Evenso, the participants, beneficiaries, hired workers, and financial supporters alike, felt sustained by the program. Many beneficiaries stayed on or came back for visits. The Rev. Upchurch preached each Sunday morning to



his Home residents and his son-in-law, The Rev. Wiese, took the evening service. This was not an official church but that small technicality seemed to be of no moment.

The Church of the Nazarene Headquarters in Kansas City, MO , maintains a growing file on The Rev. J. T. Upchurch and his work. They give full credit to his leadership in the church and in the rescue movement.

The so-called "Rescue Movement" was popular in the United States in the half-century beginning about 1890. The thrust was to lift up females out of the traps into which they had fallen. By 1930 these movements had begun to weaken. Other elements in society had begun to take over - such as the then fledgling welfare state - the pitfalls of which we have recently come to understand.

In a nutshell, we can say that Cousin Jimmie found a parade and stepped in front to be a leader. He was ill equipped to do this, but by dint of hard work and shall we say "the use of his Upchurch genes" rose to the occasion. There can be little doubt that he could have been a success in politics, or the business world, although there is no gainsaying the proposition that his religious conviction gave him an edge in his life's work.

There are some who would now revise history and say that the rescue movement was designed to show downtrodden females in a negative light. This modern day so-called enlightened view even proposes that the Rescue Movement was failed in concept because it assumed that all women wanted to emulate "Victorian" virtues. Said another way, it is claimed that the Rescue Movement failed to allow females the sexual freedom to which they were entitled. While the Berachah Home and the work of The Rev. Upchurch and his colleagues fell short of perfection, we cannot agree with the modern revision of the goals and procedures employed by The Rev. Upchurch. All that we have learned, tells us he was as pure as the driven snow in intent and purpose.

For whatever combination of reasons the Berachah Home ceased to function as such in the mid-1930s and The Rev. Upchurch and his wife moved back to Dallas, TX in 1940. The Home was used in a somewhat related venture for another several years, led by a daughter of The Rev. Upchurch and her husband - Allie Mae (Upchurch) Wiese and The Rev. Wiese.

In Dallas, The Rev. Upchurch continued his christian work and his wife finally became a member of The Church of the Nazarene. During the 1940s we know he owned a farm which was in the Grapevine area, near the present Dallas-Fort Worth Airport. There is some indication that this farm was used to lift up needy people. However, his granddaughter, Dorthy Betts says she only recalls this farm being mentioned in terms of an investment.

The Rev. Upchurch drew a modest salary at the Berachah Home, but his policy was that he and other employees of the home must always forgo salaries in the last months of the year, if necessary, to allow the Home to start operations on January 1 of each year free of debt. In the end the Board of the Home agreed that the Berachah Home property could be sold with certain restrictions and under certain conditions. One of these was that The Rev. Upchurch should receive an annuity of \$150/month. The records available are unclear but it seems that loopholes were found so that the wishes of the Board were circumvented.

The remnants of the Berachah Home are now found as a part of Doug Russell Park and as a part of the campus of The University of Texas at Arlington. The two visible entities are the historical marker regarding the Berachah Home and The Rev. Upchurch and the Berachah Cemetery. With these entities and the Archives in Texas and at Kansas City, MO, we have the opportunity to keep alive the memory and life's work of The Rev. James Tony Upchurch and his family - down to the present day.

The Extended Upchurch Family can be proud of our cousin who blazed a major trail in his work to right wrongs and to serve fellow humans who were among the less fortunate. His memory is worth gilding.

XID

A. THE JAMES COURTNEY U. LINE IN THE  
 MOSES U./COURTNEY U. SUBCLAN. 1117  
 1/1109

Moses U., the Head of Upchurch Clan No. 1, is believed 1  
 to have been born on 13 FEB 1753 in Brunswick Co., VA.  
 When about 2 years old he moved with his parents to the  
 Moccasin Creek Area in what is today Franklin Co., NC.  
 There he and his 10 siblings grew to adulthood and most,  
 if not all of them, married and started their families.  
 Moses U. had 11 children, all born in Franklin Co., NC, 1  
 including the youngest, Courtney U., who was born about 1109  
 1785. Then about 1802 Moses U. moved his entire family,  
 young and old alike, to Chatham Co., NC, but at a spot 1  
 very close to the adjoining county of Wake. When Courtney 1109  
 U. was about 30 years old in 1914 he married in Chatham  
 Co., NC. 20 year old Cynthia Richardson. They continued 1110  
 to live in Chatham Co., NC, the next 20 years and  
 about 9 children were born. Then about 1835 Courtney and 1109  
 and Cynthia moved to AL where 3 more children were born. 1110  
 The youngest of the lot was James Courtney U., who was 1117  
 born about 1839 in AL.

Courtney U. died in Marengo Co., AL when his son 1109  
 James Courtney U. was just a babe in arms or perhaps even 1117  
 before the child was born. The family appears on the  
 1840 census of Perry Co., AL with the widow, Cynthia 1110  
 (Synthya U.) as head of the household. James Courtney U. 1117  
 would have been the male in the 0-5 age category on the  
 census record. On the 1850 census (of Athens, Dallas  
 Co., AL) we continue to find the widow Cynthia (Cyntha U.)  
 as head of the household and James Courtney U. appears as 1117  
 "James Upchurch age 12 born AL".

Next we find James Courtney U. on the 1860 cenus of 1117  
 Walker Co., TX as a 21 year old laborer "James C. U.  
 age 21" in the home of his older farmer brother Calvin B. U.

Now the Civil War intervenes. James Courtney U. 1117  
 enrolled on 21 OCT 1861 at Velasco, TX, to serve the  
 Confederacy for the war. He appears on various dates and  
 in various units as J.C.U. and James C.U. Only by tracking  
 the activities of his units on specific dates would we learn  
 of how his time was spent. He did show up with a horse  
 valued at \$125.00.

We note that James Courtney U. married on 25 DEC 1865  
 (Walker Co., TX) Nancy Ann (Hickson) Simpson. She was  
 born 26 NOV 1842 (Louden Co., AL) and died 5 DEC 1924  
 (Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX). Her first husband, John  
 Simpson, whom she married about 1860, had been killed in the  
 war.

James Courtney and Nancy had at least two children  
 prior to his death in Texas in 1874. They were Annie 39376  
 Minerva U., b. JUN 1867 (McLennan Co., TX), and James 39378  
 Tony U., b. 29 OCT 1870 (Bosqueville, McLennan Co., TX).  
 It was the son James Tony U. who went on to become a 39378  
 famous minister and whose life and work are treated

elsewhere in this issue.

After James Courtney U. died his widow, Nancy, md 3rd, 28 JUL 1878 (Waco, McLennan Co., TX), David H. Ellis, b. 1820 (ME). We know this marriage lasted at least until 1910 when we find them on the census in McLennan Co., TX.

The 1890, 1900, and 1910 census records for TX bring us to some uncertainty about the children of Nancy Ann (Hickson)(Simpson)(Upchurch) Ellis and as to the father of some of them. Both the 1900 and 1910 records show that Nancy had 6 children, of whom 2 were living in 1900 and 1910. It seems quite clear that she and James Courtney U. had together Annie Minerva U., b. 1867 and James Tony U., b., 1870. The 1870 census shows in the household of James Courtney and Nancy U. a child, Cynthia U., b. about 1867 (TX) but no Annie Minerva U., who we know was born JUN 1867. Several questions come to mind. Where is Annie? Are Annie and Cynthia one and the same? If Cynthia is real and different from Annie, we must presume that Cynthia was born in 1866 or 1869 to allow the usual 9 months separation for births from a particular mother. In any case, Cynthia is never heard from again after the 1870 census. The names of the other children of Nancy have not come down to us. They could have been fathered by the 1st, 2nd or 3rd husbands of Nancy. Shall we ever learn more?

MASTER OUTLINE FOR THE JAMES COURTNEY U.		1117
LINE IN THE MOSES U./COURTNEY U. SUBCLAN		1/1109
I. Courtney U., b. about 1785, d. before 1840.		1109
A. James Courtney U., b. about 1839 (Dallas Co., AL),		1117
d. 1874, md. 25 DEC 1865 (Walker Co., Tx)		
Nancy Ann (Hickson) Simpson, b. 26 NOV 1842		41532
(Louden Co., AL), d. 5 DEC 1924 (Arlington,		
Tarrant Co., TX)(Bur.Old Arlington Cemetery,		
Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX)[Nancy md. 1st about 1860		
John Simpson, d. in Civil War, She md. 3rd		
28 JUL 1878 (Waco, McLennan Co., TX) David H.		
Ellis, b. 1820 (ME), d. (Arlington, Tarrant		
Co., TX).		
1. Cynthia U., b. about 1867 (TX), d. before		26968
1900. (She is presumed never to have married		
and to have had no children). Is she the same		
as Annie listed below?		
2. Annie Minerva U., b. JUN 1867 (TX, p. Waco,		39376
McLennan Co.,TX), d. 1917 (Arlington, Tarrant		
Co., TX)(Bur. Berachah Cem., Arlington, Tarrant		
Co., TX), md 2 SEP 1897 (Waco, McLennan Co., TX)		
John Doak Pattillo, b. 1869 (AR).		39377
a. Archie William Pattillos, b. JUL 1898		39901
(Rhea Mills, Collin Co., TX), d. 26 APR		
1951 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX)(Bur. Grove		
Hill, Memorial Park, Dallas, Dallas Co.,		
TX), md 1st 1920 (Arlington, Tarrant Co.,		
TX) Alice Irene Kerby, b. 17 AUG 1902		39905
(Sweetwater, Nolan Co., TX), d. 18 JUL		



- 1978 (Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX)(Bur. Moore Memorial Gardens, Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md 2nd 1942 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX) Mary Lurline (Franklin) Flint, b. 39906  
20 DEC 1901 (Pine Bluff, Jefferson Co., AR), d. 1965 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX)  
(Bur. Dallas, Dallas Co., TX).
- i. William Lee Pattillos, b. 28 APR 1922 39902  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md. 21 JUN 1946 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX) Mary Faith Northcutt, b. 26 FEB 1926 39907  
(Sullivan, Franklin Co., MO). No issue.
  - ii. Reginald Archie Pattillos, b. 30 OCT 1930 39903  
(Dallas, Dallas Co., TX), md. 1st 1 APR 1948 (Denton, Denton Co., TX) Tommie Gail Sailing, md 2nd 10 JAN 1950 40305  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX) Loretta Smithe, b. abt. 1940 (Kilgore Gregg Co., TX), md. 3rd 26 APR 1968 40306  
(Oakland, Alameda Co., CA) Sarah Louise Sisson, b. 3 MAR 1934 39908  
(Columbus, Franklin Co., OH). (1 child).
3. SON or DAU, b. before 1900.
  4. SON or DAU, b. before 1900.
  5. SON or DAU, b. before 1900.
  6. James Tony (Torey) U., MOG, b. 29 OCT 1870 39378  
(Bosqueville, McLennan Co., TX), d. 12 SEP 1950 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX)(Bur. Laurel Land Cem., Dallas, Dallas Co., TX), md. 17 NOV 1892 (Waco, McLennan Co., TX)  
Margaret Mae Adams, b. 5 DEC 1873 39379  
(Jackson, Madison Co., TN), d. 29 AUG 1963 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX)(Bur. AS HUS).
  - a. Allie Mae U., b. 27 MAR 1894 39380  
(Waco, McLennan Co., TX), d. 30 SEP 1982 (Dallas, Dallas Co. TX), md. 1st 20 NOV 1916 (Berachah Chapel, Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX) Frank Eugene Wiese, Sr., b. 22 FEB 1888, d. 18 MAR 1944 39384  
(Dallas, Dallas Co., TX)(Bur. Dallas, Dallas Co., TX), md. 2nd Jesse B. Elder, md. 3rd 41628  
10 JAN 1964 Regniel B. Gilmore. 41629
  - i. Mary Frances Wiese, b. 9 AUG 1917 39385  
(Lubbock, Lubbock Co., TX) d. 27 JUN 1987, md 30 DEC 1945 Harold Unfried. 41632  
Issue, if any, unknown.
  - ii. Ruth Beatice Wiese, b. 6 JUL 1919 39386  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), d. 3 JUL 1983 (Carrollton, Dallas Co., TX) (Bur. Dallas, Dallas Co., TX), md. 11 JUN 1940 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX) Joseph Lewis Ingle, b. 6 SEP 1917 41635  
(Wellington, Collingsworth Co., TX)  
(3 children, 6 grandchildren).

- iii. Lois Wiese, b. 15(5) NOV 1920 39387  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md.1st  
23 JAN 1940 George White, md 2nd 41633  
William Coleman. Issue, if any 41634  
unknown.
    - iv. Eugenia Mae Wiese, b. 30 JAN 1923 39388  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md. 5  
DEC 1945 (Dallas, Dallas Co., TX)  
Douglas Franklin Roach, b. 23 APR 41648  
1918 (Ambrose, Grayson Co., TX).  
(1 child, 3 grandchildren).
    - v. Frank Eugene Wiese, Jr., b. 30 JUN 39389  
1924 (Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX),  
md. 2 JUN 1944 (Dallas, Dallas Co.,  
TX) Edwynia Henry, b. 24 JUN 1925 41654  
(Dallas, Dallas Co., TX). (3 children,  
5 grandchildren).
  - b. Ruth U., b. 27 JUL 1897 (Waco, McLennan 39381  
Co., TX). d. 7 MAY 1964, md. 7 OCT 1927  
J. B. Brady. No issue. 40008
  - c. James Wesley U., b. 13 APR 1898 (Waco, 39382  
McLennan Co., TX), d. AUG 1976 (Arlington,  
Tarrant Co., TX)(Bur. Moore Memorial Gardens,  
Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md. 12 JAN 1920  
Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX) Gola Maud 41533  
Pummill b. 14 AUG 1900 (Arlington,  
Tarrant Co., TX), d. 13 APR 1983 (Arlington,  
Tarrant Co., TX)(Bur. AS HUS).
  - i. James Wayne U., Sr., b. 21 FEB 1921 39390  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX) d. 29 JUL  
1959 (Oakland, Contra Costa Co., CA)  
(Bur. AS FAT)., md. 28 MAR 1941(Marietta,  
Love Co., OK) Florence Belle Hyslop, b.41666  
9 FEB 1922 (Taylor, Williamson Co., TX).  
(4 children, 8 grandchildren, 5 ggchildren).
    - ii. Dorothy Nelle U., b. 6 JUL 1925 39391  
(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md. 24  
NOV 1946 (Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX)  
Dexter Loraine Betts, b. 12 NOV 1922 41538  
(Ganado, Jackson Co., TX). (3 children,  
4 grandchildren).
  - d. Arthur Wilbur U., b. 29 JUN 1902 (Dallas, 39383  
Dallas Co., TX), d. 3 DEC 1983, md. 31  
OCT 19--, Velma Mae Miller. 41630
  - e. Lometa Valerie U., b. 29 FEB 1908 (DEC 39392  
1907)(Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX), md.  
Henry C. Christopher. 39393
  - i. Shirley Margret Christopher, b. DEC 39394  
1934 (Arlington, Tarrant Co., TX) md.  
Joe Anderson. Issue, if any, unknown. 41631
    - ii. Henry Coleman Christopher, b. DEC 39395  
1936, md. twice. Issue, if any,  
unknown.

## A. THE WORDS OF THE REVEREND JAMES TONY UPCHURCH.

## 1. Background.

The quest to understand The Rev. J. T. U. and his work is made easier by virtue of the fact that we have so many of his writings available. In his religious efforts he made extensive use of publications. The publications took different names at different times - THE PURITY JOURNAL, THE PURITY CRUSADER, the KINGDOM CRUSADER, etc. They were used to spread the word about his good works, to acquire converts and to encourage financial backers. Unless otherwise stated, the words in these publications were written by The Rev. Upchurch himself. In the September 1924 (Vol. 21, No. 6) issue of THE PURITY CRUSADER he produced an article about his early life. This article is reproduced here for what it tells us about the man and his work and as an example of his writing.

2. A Bit of My Early Experience by J. T. Upchurch.

"Why do I write? I can not tell. Some strange power seems to impel me to do so. For many years I have known that great influences are exerted by the pen.

So deeply was I impressed of this fact that I stood one day on the sidewalk, with arms folded across my breast, as a brass band passed slowly by, softly playing a funeral march.

It was closely followed by a funeral car, bearing the remains of the gifted, talented, but sadly misguided iconoclastic writer, W. C. Brann.

As it solemnly moved along I lifted my heart in earnest prayer, "O God, let the mantle of W. C. Brann's genius for writing fall on me, and I pledge Thee it shall only be used to bless humanity and glorify Thy Name."

I felt it. I meant it.

It has not been mine to be blessed with anything like a finished education.

My life has known far more of poverty than anything else, therefore the opportunities for research have been limited indeed but I do believe that my heart beats honestly and in sympathy with the great class to which I belong -- the Common People.

It is not my purpose to attempt a literary production, but in simple language to humbly relate part of the story of my life.

The motive which prompts me may be that ever present and burning desire to write, but I rather think I am prompted by a deep inclination to honor God in relating His tender mercy and loving watchfulness over me for the past thirty years, during which time He has graciously kept me while I was passing through perils and privations in interest of the Rescue Work.

I am a native of Texas, and was born in an humble, little farmhouse on the beautiful Bosque.

Our nearest post-office was Bosqueville; but a few miles farther on was the village of Waco, with some six or seven thousand inhabitants which made it, in those days, a great city.

When I was about three years of age I was very sick, during which time my father died. Then came that treatment which is so often accorded to a fatherless child. After being taken from place to place I finally found myself living with my mother in Waco.

I often earned small sums of money running errands, selling fruit, flowers, etc. though only about six years old.

From the time I was nearly seven until I was ten years of age I sold newspapers, chiefly the Waco Daily Examiner, and as a newsboy met with many experiences which made lasting impressions upon my childish mind.

#### The First Outcast.

It was while engaged in selling papers that I saw the first outcast girl I had ever knowingly met.

One beautiful afternoon some of us newsboys were standing on the street corner near the public square when a wild scream suddenly cut the air, like blades of steel, causing the creeping blood to chill with the cadence of despair.

Again and again the screams were heard. A crowd began to rapidly collect at the mouth of Bridge Street from whence the mad cries came. We, too, ran in that direction. Being fleet of foot I quickly reached the spot, and beheld a most beautiful young woman furiously struggling in the grasp of two strong policemen.

Her face was distorted, her neat fitting dress was torn in several places. Scream after scream, keen and penetrating, pealed forth; while oaths, black and awful, fell from her thin, delicate lips.

The crowd surged about them.



The officers made their way slowly in the direction of the old calaboose which they finally reached and the woman was thrust into a little dingy cell with a heavy wooden door and a small iron-barred window through which all the light was furnished. The ponderous door was closed with a bang and the crowd dispersed, leaving the woman sobbing and sighing in her lonely cell.

I lingered near for a season anxious to sympathize with the poor creature, but the shades of night began to wrap their dark folds about the earth and I hurried home to tell my mother all about the terrible incident.

When I had told her, she said: "Hush my dear, that was a bad woman, and they are taking her up to preserve order."

I did not know then what a "bad woman" was, but I knew it must be something dreadful.

In spite of it all I felt somehow that the girl had in some way been terribly wronged, and she had my childish sympathy.

Although more than four decades have passed since I witnessed that scene yet ever and anon in my vivid imagination I can hear those wild cries and see that beautiful but distorted face, and am made to realize that the sin of unchastity, which takes humanity's fairest flowers and converts them into "bad women" is indeed a cruel monster.

After that, other incidents came and I was often thrown among the unfortunates of the city, but in my heart there was always the tenderest sympathy for this class of people.

Through many and varied experiences I passed, all of which seemed combined to make me a skeptic.

Cigarette smoking, novel reading, theater going, dancing, and inconsistent Church members all contributed their share to make an unbeliever out of me.

No wonder that I found myself at the age of eighteen an avowed atheist, not believing in the existence of God, Heaven, Hell or that I ever had a soul, but thinking when I died I would vanish like a light which you extinguish.

There had been much sorrow and sadness in my life, and I often thought that no one cared for me, but thank God one night I met and formed the acquaintance of the Man of Sorrows who was acquainted with grief, and my life became changed from that very moment.

I was no longer a blatant infidel, but an earnest, active Christian.

My first call was to the prison work, where I labored for nearly two years with some marked evidences of success.

In Christian union meetings I would hear a good deal of talk about city mission work and I desired to take it up, but it was not until I was most blessedly sanctified that God gave me a call to the mission and slum work.

#### Called To Rescue Work.

I feel thankful, indeed, to my precious mother and step-father who taught me common honesty and instilled into my heart a powerful dislike for shams and hypocrsiy(sic), and notwithstanding I was reared in an infidel home I was taught and lived what the world called a moral life, and knew nothing, by practice, of the salcons(sic), gambling hells, or haunts of shame, but held aloof from them as though they were infected with some deadly plague.

How strange that God should call me, when scarcely twenty-four years of age, to labor among that class of people.

One beautiful morning on the Lord's Day after our regular service in the prison and poor-house we were returning to our church and being a little late we took a short cut which caused us to drive through the slums. Passing a three-story brick right in the heart of the "reservation" we chanced to glance up and saw at the window of the second story an inexpressibly sad face looking forth from behind a gently flowing lace curtain. It was only a glance, but there was so much disclosed in that look.

The life seemed, from its very environment, to be so lonely, so deserted, and so utterly helpless that I felt the appeal for help burning into my very soul.

In the service that morning I heard the call go rumbling through my being: "Go to the outcast."

What does it mean? Will I not lose my position? Why don't the Church do the work? What will my wife say? Why don't God call an older person? How can the girls be reached as they are not allowed to attend church? Over and over these questions went sweeping through my mind. Bro. Lastinger who was sitting near me placed a small paper in my hands which described the death scene of a redeemed girl who went sweeping through the gates of death shouting victory in the name of Jesus.

It was settled, I would go. My wife was informed of my decision and said she would stand by me."

UB VOL 20, NO 2, PP 57

APR 1999

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

CLAN 1. (MOSES UPCHURCH)XID  
1

The extended Upchurch family has a number of successful authors. Among them is Michael Vincent U. of Seattle, WA. He is of the Isham Sims U. Line in the 2593,25 Moses U./Murray U. Subclan. We have not had regular contact with him but his 1/14 byline appears regularly as a book critic. As of September 1998, he was named book critic for THE SEATTLE TIMES. The release on this appointment, provided by Cousin Richard Dean U., reported that since 1987 Cousin Michael had 5494,2593 contributed frequent free-lance reviews to THE SEATTLE TIMES, to the WASHINGTON POST, THE NEW YORK TIMES, and the SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE. He is a graduate of the University of Exeter in England. He has published four novels titled as follows: JAMBOREE (1991), AIR (1986), THE FLAME FOREST (1989), AND PASSIVE INTRUDER (1995).

UB VOL 20, NO 3, P 89

JUL 1999

CLAN 1. Moses Upchurch.XID  
1

A nice exchange has taken place with Cousin Richard B. Poe of Apex, NC. 4259 He is of the Isham Sims U. line in the Moses U./Murray U. Subclan. He has 25,1/14 alerted us to the importance of Ebenezer United Methodist Church in Chatham Co., NC to his Upchurch heritage. Our contact with Cousin Richard arose because he learned that Cousin James Roy Taylor of Houston, TX had 6326 copies of the West Upchurch Book for sale and wrote to Jim for a copy.

## II. PHOTOGRAPH

### A TRIBUTE TO ALL UPCHURCH FAMILY MEMBERS WHO HAVE SERVED IN THE ARMED FORCES OF THE USA



**Lt. Robert Hoyle Upchurch**  
Missing in Action in Kanchow, China 1944

Lt. Robert Hoyle U. (XID 22596), b. 23 AUG 1923 (High Falls, Moore Co., NC) was the son of Charles Kelly U., Sr. and grandson of William Henry U. I of the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan - Kelly F. U. Line. We take this opportunity to tell the unique story of Cousin Hoyle U. in the form of a tribute to all of our family who have made themselves available to defend our freedoms.

The Upchurch enclave at High Falls in Moore Co., NC was started by William Henry U. I (1852-1925) whose roots trace back to the Olive Chapel Church area just west of Apex in Wake Co., NC. Hoyle was born and raised in High Falls. Upon finishing high school there he went to Texas to work in a factory that produced planes for the Air Force. However, as soon as he reached 18 he joined the Air Force. Within three years he was serving as a pilot for a P-40 Fighter Plane in the famous Flying Tigers in China. Bad luck overtook him as he flew in bad weather and on 6 OCT 1944 he was reported as Missing In Action. In the normal case he would never be heard from again. However, his story was to be different.

As it turned out Hoyle had crashed into a mountain near Guidong. The native Chinese recovered his body, gave it a proper burial and henceforth tended his grave site. Since Guidong is a remote village in a rugged and remote area of China the fact that his body had been found did not reach authorities. Then after 60 years the story finally reached Chinese officials. In due course American officials used DNA samples to prove



that the Airman whose body the villagers had treated with respect was in fact Hoyle. Then it was only a matter of time until the remains could be returned to his home. On 8 APR 2006 at a High Falls Church which he attended in his youth he was buried next to his parents. The event was rendered with Full Military Honors including a fly-over of four Air Force jets. The ceremony was attended by several generations of relatives and by Chinese and American officials. Hoyle now rests in American soil as do his 9 siblings.

This touching story is about how one of our own gave his all for our joint cause. It is also a story of how our much maligned U. S. Government goes to great lengths and expense to preserve the honor and integrity of our fallen service men and women.

This story has a sequel and a sequel of sorts. For many years details of the William Henry U. I Line have arrived in bits and pieces and some have appeared in the UB. Your editor has never visited High Falls but now feels an urgency to do so. Much input for this part of the Upchurch family has come from Calvin Kelly U. of Las Vegas, NV. He too has never visited High Falls but he knows about it. He descends from an Upchurch Line headed by John Winton U., Sr., a brother of William Henry U. I. John established an Upchurch Enclave in Bullock Co., Ga. In another section of this issue of the UB we tell about a recent visit to Cousin Calvin Kelly U. The timing was coincidental.

There is more. Many of my Grandfather's family have a special attachment to the story of the WWII action of U. S. Forces in China where Cousin Hoyle perished. It was there that my First Cousin Frank Jefferson U., Sr. served as a young Army 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. in WWII, advising Chinese Army Regiments. Serving with him was another 1<sup>st</sup> Lt., James Allen Arnold, Sr. Upon their return after the war, Jim was introduced to my sister, Ernestine, and soon married her. I regret to report that Frank and Jim are no longer with us. Jim often regaled me with his stories of action in China so many years ago. How I wish these had been written down for posterity.

May Hoyle, Frank, and Jim and all of their comrades in arms rest in peace.



**Clan 1. (Moses Upchurch ) {Son of Richard U. II}.****1**

**Moses U. was b. 1753 in Brunswick Co., VA, moved as a child with his father to NC and served in the Revolutionary War from Franklin Co., NC. There he married and started his family. About 1804 he and his brother Nathan U. I moved with their young families to the border of Wake and Chatham Counties, NC. Moses U. d. in 1853 in Chatham Co., NC and is buried there at an unknown location. He had children: Letha Parthenia, Gillium, Mary, Ruffin, Whitney, Calorgy, Murray, Clegg, Sims, And Courtney. Of his children only the youngest, Courtney is known to have left NC.** 78

**The photograph section of this UB issue contains a report about Robert Hoyle Upchurch of the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan and about how Calvin Kelly U., another member of this Subclan was recently contacted.**

**Cousin Charles Peterson of Columbia, MO, a member of the Moses U./ Courtney U. Subclan continues to be a highly valued participant in Upchurch matters.**

**As we continue to collect and organize Upchurch information from NC evidence on the descendants of Moses U. appears often.**

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

XID

Clan 1. Moses U.

1

## A. Re: The Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan.

1/9

Let us tell the story of how 2006 has been a year of bringing the Upchurch Enclave in High Falls, Moore Co., NC into sharper focus. For over two decades information about our Upchurch cousins in High Falls has gradually appeared. The late Annie Ruth U. a lifelong resident of High Falls was a prime source as was cousin Calvin Kelly U. of Las Vegas, NV.

22667

22649

Then came the message of how cousin Robert Howle U. had died in piloting his P-40 fighter plane over China in WWII. There his body rested until it was discovered and reinterred at High Falls in 2006 with an appropriate

22596

ceremony. This story and a picture of Hoyle appeared in UB, Vol. 27, No. 1, January-June 2006.

Having never been to High Falls in Moore Co., NC the story of Hoyle made it imperative for your editor to visit the site. On 24 JUN 2006, after visiting the pottery manufacturing center in North Carolina in Seagrove, NC we approached High Falls from the south at about 2:00 p.m. Sallaine and I were accompanied by her sisters Joyce Griffin, Mary Oriez and close family friend Linwood Penny. Not having any prior arrangements and not knowing the lay of the land in High Falls, we crossed the Deep River Bridge and immediately found ourselves in the town. Seeing a sign on the first road to the right which heralded the United Methodist Church we impulsively took that road. In a few hundred yards we came upon the church on the right and turned in. We could see the graveyard behind the church and there behind the church a few people were gathered, preparing for a picnic as it turned out. We unintentionally attracted much attention as I accidentally drove behind the church the wrong way on a one-way street. By the time we drove back to the front of the church and returned, driving the right way, all eyes were on this strange car with a Missouri license plate. A friendly face appeared at the car door and introduced himself as Tommy Upchurch. We had stumbled upon the home church of the extended Upchurch family of High Falls, NC. Upon explaining our interests and mission, the group took us under their wing and extended unbounded hospitality as if we were close relatives who had returned home after wandering like the prodigal son of the Bible.

22682

The way in which we as very distant cousins but essentially as strangers were embraced by this High Falls gathering is heartwarming. Such joyful experiences can happen frequently to one who is willing to reach out to cousins, be they near kin or not. There is more.

Tommy escorted Sallaine through the cemetery and helped her record inscriptions for legions of Upchurch monuments which I would later process. Among them was the celebrated burial site for Cousin Hoyle. In the meantime, the Minister regaled me with the story of the Memorial Service for Hoyle. It seems the famed Blue Angels quartet of fighter planes was to do a fly-over and execute the sudden departure of one plane from the formation signifying a missing entity. However, the on-the-spot liaison person learned that climatic conditions had changed so that the fly-over could not proceed. And yet, there was a delay in the cemetery proceedings as one dignitary talked overly long. This delay allowed climatic conditions to take a turn for the better. With instant ground to air communication the four A-10 Thunderbolts flew over High Falls at the precise moment appropriate for paying tribute to a long ago Upchurch hero who perished in the service of his country and all Americans.

Our visit at High Falls continued as first one cousin and then another showed us Upchurch related pictures in the church and exchanged stories



XID

with us, establishing ever more common ground. Follow up activities continued in the weeks ahead as Cousin Kathy sent not only the picture of the 7 Upchurch brothers but also a substantial printed record of the Upchurches of High Falls. This has been used to substantially improve our Master Outline. In this follow-up, a call was made to Cousin Tommy to thank him for his cooperation. In the process I offered to give an Upchurch lecture at High Falls later in the year, if he would assemble interested parties.

54956

Cousin Tommy did take us up on our offer and on 21 OCT 2006 Sallaine and I made our way to High Falls where Tommy had assembled several dozen Upchurches for a family picnic. The group seemed to appreciate the 30-minute talk on the history of the Upchurch family. There were numerous questions and interesting exchanges were held with individuals before and after the formal presentation. Cousin Richard Michael U. "Rick" seemed to have a special interest. His wife Sara runs a restaurant in Ramseur, NC and we promised ourselves a visit there in due course. Recently Cousin Tommy and his wife Doris sent us a registration list for the 21 OCT 2006 reunion and we will send Upchurch information to each registrant.

40354

The reader will understand that the Upchurch Enclave at High Falls represents only one slice of Upchurch history out of dozens and even hundreds of slices that can be found across the country. We encourage willing family members to go find some of the slices and write something about them. High Falls is but a template offering encouragement to potential prospectors of Upchurch history.

**B. Re: The Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan,**

**1/11**

While visiting the historic Yates Mill in Wake Co., NC on 24 OCT 2006, we asked Park Manager Rebekkah Cope to provide us with names of individuals who might have an interest in local and/or Upchurch history. Several names provided have already produced significant results. One of these was the name of William Spurgeon Hutchins, Sr. of Raleigh, NC. It was said that his grandmother was an Upchurch. We visited Mr. Hutchins in his home in Raleigh on 28 OCT 2006. There were several delightful outcomes. First, we have established that his grandmother was nee: Velma Caroline U. We had her in our records but with only a first name using a botched spelling and we did not have her marriage or any of her descendants. Now, thanks to Mr. Hutchins all of this has been corrected and several more contacts are in play.

**8723**

Velma is a daughter of Silas Merritt U. of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan - Candis U. Line. At age 82 Mr. Hutchins has a burning interest in history overall and is alert and willing to share. He is a walking storehouse of knowledge about local happenings. Additionally, he lives in a wonderful

**8715**

**XID**

historic home in the historic Oakwood District of Raleigh, NC. It was bequeathed to him by an Aunt. This was in spite of the fact that he teased her by calling the home a "mausoleum". With its original furnishings it is indeed a Museum. Among Mr. Hutchins relatives was a Mr. Gatling, presumably of Gatling Gun fame. One Hutchins ancestor owned land on Walnut Creek in Wake County, NC as of 1802 and the tract should be traceable back to the Land Grant which would dovetail with our Rhamkette Project. In these long ago records there appears a Sarah Poe. This is a name that must be transferred to cooperator Anne Grebing of Apex, NC to help repay her for ongoing help. Anne is a Poe descendant.

Thus did a visit to Yates Mill lead to Bill Hutchins and to a maelstrom of ongoing activity which is well known to all who dare to pursue family history.

## II. PHOTOGRAPH

GRANDCHILDREN OF KELLY FRANKLIN U.  
WHO HEADS A LINE IN THE  
MOSES U./RUFFIN U. SUBCLAN

XID  
22540

1,9



A	B	C	D
	E	F	G
A. Eddie <u>Newland</u> U.	E. George <u>Mack</u> U.	22562,22558	
B. Robert <u>Kenneth</u> U.	F. <u>Durwood</u> Winton U.	22559,22556	
C. <u>Frank</u> Hampton U.	G. Charles Kelly U., Sr.	22560,22557	
D. <u>Roland</u> Henry U.		22565, ---	

The story of this picture and this family unfolds in three parts, two of which appear in this issue and one of which appeared in the previous UB issue. In the last issue one may read about Lt. Robert Hoyle U. (XID) 22596 whose picture appears there. This WWII hero was a son of Charles Kelly U., Sr. (XID 22557) pictured above.

The above picture and a related story about the families of the men pictured above evolved based on two trips your Editor made to their Upchurch Enclave in High Falls, Moore County, NC in 2006.

The seven brothers pictured were sons of William Henry U., I (XID) 22554 who settled in High Falls around 1880+/-5 years. He had been born in the nest of Upchurches who settled on the Wake/Chatham border about 1802.

We are indebted to Mrs. James Edison Kennedy [Kathy] (XID) 54956 for the photograph. It is undated but based on the known birth dates of those pictured, a fair guess is that the picture was made about 1906, one hundred years ago.

It must be reported that William Henry U., I (XID) 22554 had at least eight children. The one not pictured above is the lone daughter, Maude M. U. (XID) 22567 born 20 DEC 1898. She was the youngest of the lot and unfortunately died on 12 OCT 1906 just before her eighth birthday.



## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

XID

1

### Clan 1. Moses

Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan.

In the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan there was a line headed by Bennett A. U., 1834-1872. After the Civil War Bennett returned to his wife and young family and his farm at Holly Springs in southwestern Wake Co., NC. After his demise two of his sons Thomas Benton U., Sr. and William Joseph U. began to make their way in life. They were ambitious, capable and soon proved themselves. They married sisters of the well-to-do Johnson family of Fuquay-Springs in southern Wake Co., NC. Their interest in the timber industry took them to Raeford in Hoke Co., NC. There they settled but after a time Joe moved on to Georgia. Tom spent the rest of his life in Raeford and became a entrepreneur of extraordinary proportions, the results of which are clearly seen in the community today.

With the above background in mind it should come as no surprise that Raeford, NC might be a good place to give an Upchurch Lecture. To set this in motion the idea was proposed to Alan McGee, Jr. who is a grandson of Tom and who has been a great cooperator in family history matters. Alan took the project in hand and organized a Raeford visit for us to take place on May 1, 2007.

James P. Jones agreed to travel from Raleigh, NC to Raeford with me for the outing and to provide support for my power point presentation. We were met at Raeford by Alan and Nancy McGee, Jr. and by Eloise (Upchurch) Carter, another grandchild of Tom. Eloise led us on a tour of the area and Alan and Eloise alternated in regaling us with stories of the various Upchurch sites we visited. This included the Upchurch homes, the Upchurch farms and the cemetery. We saw Upchurch School, named in honor of Tom and being a school where Eloise taught.

After the tour we adjourned to a Raeford restaurant where the family commenced to gather. It was, in fact, a family gathering but specifically organized to take lunch together and to listen to an Upchurch lecture which I had prepared to fit this particular group. Those present were gracious in their participation and asked numerous questions.

Here is a list of those who attended per Cousin Alan.

Jim Jones  
Joanne Reid  
Charles Avera  
Marion Avera  
Mary Cameron  
Gene Carter  
Eloise Carter  
William Carter  
Alan McGee, Jr.  
Nancy McGee

Lewis Upchurch, Jr.  
Betty Upchurch  
Lew Upchurch, III  
Lisa Upchurch  
Maddie Upchurch  
Isabelle Upchurch  
Max Upchurch  
Mary Lawhon  
Richard Lawhon  
Mary Lawhon Carfowler

Susan Smith  
Nanci Robinson  
Betty Hasty  
Larry McGee  
Dot McGee  
Laura Thomas  
Wyatt Upchurch  
Mary Upchurch  
Jodie Willis

Sue Alexander  
Leigh Hennessey  
Elsie Cameron  
Donald Cameron, Jr.  
Beth Currin  
John Hasty, Jr.  
Marie Brown  
Cam Brown  
Suzanne Hurley  
Phil Upchurch

After the noontime event we were treated to a relatively new local museum which occupies an historic home and a full city block. It now contains excellent displays illustrating the history of the area.

The Raeford outing was very useful in keeping one part of the Upchurch story alive and we are grateful to Alan and his cousins for making all the necessary arrangements. This was my first visit to the Upchurch enclave in Raeford. I had once met at a meeting in Raleigh, NC, Thomas Benton U., Jr. 1902-1993 who was a State and National Leader in Agriculture matters. He was the father of Eloise and the uncle of Alan and in his later years he was a very productive cooperator on documenting our Upchurch heritage.

Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan.

In the last two issues of the UB considerable detail has been presented about the descendants of Ruffin U. who lived at High Falls, NC. The reports concerned the return of the remains of Robert Hoyle U. from China to High Falls. This was done with great ceremony given that the location of the crash of Hoyle's P40 Fighter Plane had remained unknown to authorities for over 50 years. Now there is more and a sequel.

Given that the Chinese People and the Chinese Government were so helpful in the mechanics and ceremony of returning Cousin Hoyle's mortal remains to High Falls, a contingent of Hoyle's relatives staged a visit to China in 2007 to show their appreciation. Wayne Hoyle Anthony, who was named for his Uncle Hoyle, led the 2007 trip to China. More can be obtained by using his e-mail address: whanthony@earthlink.net. In the meantime we offer his report submitted on 17 Apr 2007:

"

Hello Upchurch Family,

We just returned from China on 4/14/07, after 3 wonderful weeks there. The jet lag is still affecting our sleep, and we have been extremely busy trying to get caught up with taxes, bills, banking, mail, etc. I apologize for not getting something off to you all sooner, but it has been a bit hectic. I can only reiterate what the others on the trip have already written. It was an unbelievably moving life event. We had visited the Flying Tiger Museum in Chongqing a few days before joining the delegation in Changsha. I was brought to tears at that place simply by reading an inscription written decades ago by President Roosevelt. The museum itself is the actual home of General "Vinegar Ben" Stilwell, and still has much of the original furniture still there. It took me back in time to a war torn area, and filled me with pride and admiration for what my Uncle Hoyle had done. I felt that perhaps our return to China was a closing of the loop that had remained open for oh so many years. However, nothing prepared me for the outpouring of kindness, gratitude, and respect shown by the people of Guidong. Speaking at the memorial dedication ceremony, I became choked up and had to pause. The interpreter was Hongie Schulte, a member of the delegation, and she also became choked up and had difficulty continuing. To have been part of this was perhaps the most moving experience of my life. There is much to tell, which will have to wait for another time. But, I wanted to at least give you some appreciation of this incredible event. Uncle Hoyle was shot down by Japanese planes, an exhaustive investigation by the Chinese has shown. He is a hero of great magnitude in China. The memorial speaks for itself, but the reactions of the Chinese people to whom I imparted the story was equally impressive. The Flying Tigers are highly revered in China, and the Chinese people are very grateful to the Americans for fighting by their sides to defeat the Japanese

"

**Clan No. 1. Moses Upchurch Clan.**

Moses U., Head of Clan 1, arrived on the eastern border of Chatham County, NC about 1802. Descendants of two of his sons moved into counties parts of which lie in the Yadkin River System. Descendants of son Ruffin U. moved into Moore County and descendants of son Whitney U. moved into Hoke County. In fairness, the main locations of these families were in High Falls in Moore Co. and in Raeford in Hoke Co. Both of these towns are just outside the watershed boundaries of the Yadkin. No doubt some cousins edged over into the watershed proper. We have fudged only a little!

## V. UPCHURCH CLANS IN AMERICA

XID

1

Clan 1. Moses Upchurch Clan.

Parthenia Upchurch Line. Our documentation on this Line is not what we would like but we have a good hypothesis. A part of the story is told in the Wake County, NC Heritage Book. There in the story about the Eagle Rock Community we learn about Thomas Henry Avera, b. 3 MAR 1832, d. 1912, md. Barthenia Smith, d. 1914. Our hypothesis is that Barthenia (aka Parthenia) Smith was the daughter of Upchurch Smith, who was the son of Parthenia U., whose father was Moses U., Head of Clan NO. 1. We also learn from the Heritage Book that Thomas Henry Avera attended Lovejoy School in Raleigh, then in 1854 studied medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, thus later being called Dr. Avera. While in school in PA he visited NC and met 6-year-old Barthenia. He vowed to return and marry her and did. The couple became prominent in the Eagle Rock Community. And, now the plot thickens and provides the Upchurch family with one of those footnotes in history in which we must learn to take pride.

Dr. Avera and Barthenia had a daughter Lizzie Avera who about 1896 md. John Prescott Winston who owned a haberdashery shop in Wendell, NC. More important this latter couple had a son, William Augustus Winston "Bill" who provides us not one footnote in history but two. Bill was early to the flying game and in 1920 was a Sgt. Pilot in the Air Services, USA at Carlstrom Field in Florida. He is reported to have taught Charles Lindbergh how to fly. Let us examine this report from the vantage point of the book "Lindbergh" by A. Scott Berg, published in 1998 by G. P. Putnam and Sons. This is an outstanding and definitive compendium of the life of Lindbergh. By the early 1920s Lindbergh had learned to fly and even owned his own plane. However, for a variety of reasons which are well explained in the book, he applied for training as a pilot in the Air Service Reserve Corps at it was then called. His application to become a flying Cadet in the Army Flying School at Brooks Field in San Antonio, TX was approved. He reported for duty on 15 MAR 1924 as a member of a class of 104 aspiring pilots. Lindbergh's interaction with our Cousin Bill Winston is told in a brief passage on page 74 of the Book as follows: "By April, the class got to fly, with seven cadets assigned to each instructor. Lindbergh felt fortunate in falling under the command of Master Sergeant Bill Winston, reported to hold the record of flying time in the Army, with close to 3,500 hours." Lindbergh was a high performer and went on to Advanced Flying School at Kelly Field in Texas. Following training at Kelly Field, on 14 MAR 1925 he was commissioned as a Second Lieutenant in the Air Service Reserve Corps being one of nineteen who survived out of the 104 who started. Lindbergh then in 1927 became famous for making his solo flight across the Atlantic Ocean. His life unfolded with many twists and turns and he became one of the world's best known individuals for the 20<sup>th</sup> century. Upchurches can take pride in the fact that their Cousin Bill Winston helped this famous personality to increase his flying skills.

But the story does not end there for Cousin Bill. He went on to fly Pan Am Clippers. Further, he entered the picture when two famous personalities died in a plane crash in Alaska in 1935. They were the well known humorist, Will Rogers, and his pilot, Wiley Post. Cousin Bill was recruited to fly their bodies back home.



The research for the above Avera input came about as a result of the Upchurch Lecture Cousin Alan M. McGee, Jr. helped to present in Raeford, NC on 1 MAY 2007. At that gathering discussions were started with Charles Allen Avera, Sr. who married Marian Irene Lewis, a member of the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. Exchanges have continued with Charles but we have not yet been able to link his Avera ancestors to those of the aforementioned Dr. T. H. Avera.

Whitney U. Subclan. And, now comes a second bonus from the Upchurch Reunion held in Raeford, NC on 1 MAY 2007. One of the attendees was Cousin Suzanne Hurley. There was little time to chat with her at the Reunion but Cousin Alan McGee thought she should be contacted afterwards as she has been very active in research and publishing. I wrote to ask her about her background and activities. Her response was as follows:  
"Dear Cousin Phil

I want to thank you for all the work you have done in recording Upchurch family history. It is a great service, and you are doing an outstanding job. Rather than trying to answer all your questions about my career, I thought it easier to just send a resume - which is probably more than you ever wanted to know. I am also sending a booklet "They Came by Train and Chose to Remain" in which I quoted Thomas B. Upchurch's recollection of working in the turpentine industry. I happen to have some extra copies of my book on the Yadkin/Pee Dee River, so I will send one of those also. I am honored to be included in your collection.

I hope you will forgive my delay in answering. I was out of town when your thoughtful letter came, and it was accidentally misplaced. Your presentation in Raeford was most interesting and informative, and we really appreciate all you are doing.

Sincerely,  
Suzanne Hurley".

Suzanne has impressive educational credentials and an impressive record of publishing. Her undergraduate major was History as was her Master's. Her PhD Dissertation was "A Cultural Study of the Yadkin/Pee Dee River System to 1860". She holds an Honorary Doctorate of Humane Letters awarded by Converse College in Spartanburg, SC. She has received many honors and awards throughout her career which has included teaching in Public Schools and in Universities. Under her name Suzanne Cameron Linder, she has authored numerous historical books, chapters in books and articles.

Suzanne is the daughter of Thomas Upchurch Cameron, Sr., who was a grandson of Thomas Benton U., Sr. who was a great grandson of Moses U., Head of Upchurch Clan No. 1. Suzanne and her late husband, Dr. James H. Linder, had three children who are accomplished citizens in their own right. In 2004 Suzanne married Forrest Jack Hurley who was Chairman of the History Department at the University of Memphis for many years. Her work on historical research, writing and photography continues.

Suzanne has provided two of her publications which will be made a part of the Upchurch Collection at N. C. State University. One of these is about railroads in Moore Co., NC for the period 1850 - 1900 entitled "The Came By Train and Chose To Remain".

This delightful booklet goes into detail about the turpentine industry of the Sandhills area of NC. Included is an excerpt from a recollection of Thomas B. U., Sr. about his working in the turpentine industry about 1882. Her book "A River in Time" has been made a feature of the Photograph Section of this issue. The logic of the selection is given in Section II. This book may be purchased from Palmetto Conservation Foundation, P. O. Box 1984, Spartenburg, SC 29304.

For the Upchurch Family I will claim that the highly productive life led by Dr. Harriet Suzanne (Cameron)(Linder) Hurley traces back, in part, to the genes of her ancestor Thomas B. Upchurch, Sr., who was a superb performer in life against many odds. Our congratulations and Best Wishes to Cousin Suzanne

Ruffin U, Subclan. Cousin Wayne Hoyle Anthony of California has supplied us with a rather large number of email addresses that could help us expand connections with Upchurch Family members. Readers will recall that Wayne has played a large part in the memorial events relative to the return of the remains of his Uncle, Lt. Hoyle Upchurch, from China where he crashed in WWII aerial operations.

UB VOL 29 NO 1 P 29

JAN - JUL 2008

**a. Clan 1. Moses Upchurch**

**1**

Over several months we have had a major interaction with cooperator Martha Crosier Wood. Two of her Goodwin female relatives married sons of Moses Upchurch - namely Whitney & Ruffin.

1. Clan 1. Moses Upchurch Clan

1

We can report a breakthrough for the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. It was long recognized that Whitney U. had a daughter born about 1817 in Wake County, NC but for years her name was unknown. Because two of her descendants have surfaced and become cooperators we now know her name was Nancy A. (Upchurch) Hobbie (or Hobby). Nancy had a granddaughter Ethel Burns who had a

granddaughter Rita (Adams) Simpson who has made inputs allowing much improvement in our records. Rita has been assisted by her Cousin Barbara (Williams) Regulinski. This remarkable breakthrough was made possible because of our Internet connections.

We are in touch with Alexa (Harriman) U. Her husband is of the Rufus U. Line in the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan.

Some new facts about the Moses U./Ruffin U. Subclan have surfaced. We knew that Ruffin U., had a son. Thomas U., born about 1834 in Chatham County, NC. Thomas married Lydia Ann Olive and had daughters Cornelia and Mattie before going off to the Civil War and dying in 1863 as a prisoner of the Yankees at Fort Delaware, DE. Two cooperators have provided your editor with citations which provide the basis of what we can now add about how one of our cousins has written about the Civil War and about the involvement of his ancestors including Thomas.

In 1992 Cousin David Thomas U. (of the William U. IV/John U. V Subclan) noted a book entitled "Chancellorsville - 1863 - The Souls of the Brave" by Ernest B. Furgurson and that it was dedicated to four individuals including Thomas Upchurch. The dedication is reproduced below.

"

To

*Robert Daniel Ferguson*

1<sup>st</sup> SGT., CO. I, 53<sup>rd</sup> VIRGINIA INFANTRY  
WOUNDED AT FIVE FORKS, APRIL 1, 1865

*Jesse Levi Furgurson*

2<sup>nd</sup> LT., CO. C, 32<sup>nd</sup> NORTH CAROLINA INFANTRY  
WOUNDED AT PETERSBURG, APRIL 2, 1865

*Michael Decatur Lawrence Harris*

1<sup>st</sup> SGT., CO. C, 32<sup>nd</sup> NORTH CAROLINA INFANTRY  
WOUNDED AT FORT STEDMAN, MARCH 25, 1865

*Thomas Upchurch*

PRIVATE, CO. G, 7<sup>th</sup> NORTH CAROLINA INFANTRY  
CAPTURED AT GETTYSBURG, JULY 3, 1863  
DIED AT FORT DELAWARE, OCTOBER 1863

—and to their children,  
and their children's children,  
who are my parents



From this dedication it was possible to establish that the Thomas Upchurch mentioned was indeed the son of Ruffin U. However, the total story remained obscure. More progress on understanding the puzzle was delayed until early 2008 when Cousin Melva (Upchurch) Henninger (of the George U./Shadrack U. Subclan) provided an additional article entitled "The Work of Death", a Review by the aforementioned Ernest B. Furgurson. It appeared in the winter 2008 issue of "The American Scholar". The subtitle of the article was "How The Civil War Changed Forever America's Relationship With Mortality". The Review was of a book "The Republic of Suffering: Death And The Civil War" by Drew Gilpin Faust. The way the Review was crafted allows us to incidentally learn something about our broader Upchurch Family and about the Civil War.

First, the Faust book. She completed her book in 2007 before becoming the first woman President of Harvard University. She tells of the great carnage on both sides during the Civil War and explained the trauma of dealing with death. For the South, she states that it was the women who bore the burden of "the work of death".....first to care for, then to mourn, and later to memorialize them...". It was part of their lives for decades, for generations. Cousin Ernest in his Review adds his perspective, writing "In the Virginia and Carolina of my childhood, there was still a melancholy in old ladies' voices that I know was inherited from their mothers, the wives and widows of soldiers". Ernest muses that even today he imagines the same strain in the conversation of genteel southern women.

This concern of author Faust and reviewer Furgurson with death is worthy of reflection but let us hasten on to learn what we may of Cousin Ernest. First we report that he was born in 1929. He is a celebrated author of a number of books on the Civil War - hence his selection to review the Faust book.

The review by Ernest is unusual in that he elects to tell of his own ancestors who served in the Civil War - perhaps to burnish his credentials as a reviewer of the Faust book. In any event, we have elected to tease from his comments a sort of family tree.

The first paragraph of the Review by Ernest reads as follows: "On the afternoon of July 3, 1863, my great-grandfather, Robert Ferguson of the 53<sup>rd</sup> Virginia, and my great-great-grandfather, Thomas Upchurch of the 7<sup>th</sup> North Carolina, along with 15,000 other Confederate soldiers, attacked the Union lines outside Gettysburg in what history knows as Picket's Charge. When it was over, Sergeant Ferguson had somehow survived, although 88 percent of his company was killed, wounded, or missing. But Private Upchurch was captured by the Yankees and, three months later, died of smallpox in the Union prison at Fort Delaware.".... Ernest goes on to reveal that two of his other great-grandfathers also served in the War. He takes note of ancestor Sgt. Michael Harris and his half-brother and Company Commander Lt. Jesse Furgurson.

From what Ernest writes and from what we read between the lines and what we have learned from our own research, the following set of family relationships has been proposed. It is, admittedly, incomplete but given that Ernest is an illustrious Upchurch cousin and brings us a story of great power, the temptation to show what we do know could not be resisted.



We start with Margaret Holt who married Levi Furgurson and produced the Great-grandparent Jesse Levi Furgurson. She also married Absalom Harris and produced Great-grandparent Michael Harris. Jesse married Maria Baker and produced George L. Furgurson. Michael married Mary Kelly and produced Inez Harris. George and Inez married and it was their grandson Ernest, b. 1929, who was the Reviewer. Thus, the paternal line of Ernest seems well documented. The maternal line leading back to Thomas U. is less complete. Let us tell how matters stood before we caught up with cousin Ernest Furgurson by phone on 9 DEC 2008.

Starting with Ernest, b. 1929, we know his mother was nee: Passie Ferguson but we do not know her parents, so lets go all the way back to her presumed ancestor Thomas U., b. 1834. Thomas U. was the Great-great-grandfather of Ernest. Since Thomas had only two children, Cornelia and Mattie, we know one of these two females had to be the Great-grandmother of Ernest and thus the Grandmother of Passie. We know that Robert Daniel Ferguson was a Great-grandfather of Ernest. Since we have already identified the two Great-grandfathers in the paternal line of Ernest we can conclude that R. D. Ferguson must be a Great-grandfather in the maternal line of Ernest and thus the Grandfather of Passie. We are left with the conclusion that either Cornelia U. or her sister, Mattie, married a Ferguson who was the ancestor of Passie. These relationships are all true to the best of our ability to draw conclusions from the data available. We have left out the supporting census, marriage, and death records which allowed us to draw the above conclusions. It seemed worthwhile to show some of the analytical work and assumptions that have to be used in developing family relationships. Additionally, we can now take pride in embracing the notable Ernest Furgurson as a somewhat documented Upchurch cousin.

As the above words flowed onto paper we could not resist trying to make the story more complete. Thus we turned by phone to cooperator Irene (Olive) Kittinger of Cary, NC who is our collaborative expert on all things Olive. She was able to quickly engage two of her helpers who began to surface the various records referred to above. They also found the contact information for cousin Ernest Baker Furgurson, the Reviewer. I called him on 9 DEC 2008 and we had a delightful exchange. He confirms what has been divined. He also reports that Cornelia Upchurch was the daughter of Thomas U. who married Orrin Patterson Sugg and produced a daughter Stella Sugg who married first Nathan Sugg and second Joseph J. Ferguson, the son of Robert Daniel Ferguson. Joseph and Stella were the parents of Passie Durham (Ferguson) Furgurson, the mother of Ernest. We look forward to more contact with Cousin Ernest who was kind enough to review an emailed copy of this article.

And so, you might say this article evolved itself.

For the Moses U. Clan there are two additional contacts to report. One is Ely Berry U., who is of the Hanson U. Line in the Moses U./Gilliam U. Subclan. The other is Sharon Self (nee: Sharon Kay Rone) who is of the Moses U. Line in the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan.

## V. UPCHURCH BRANCHES AND CLANS IN AMERICA

### A. MOCCASIN CREEK BRANCH OF THE UPCHURCH FAMILY - Headed by Richard U., II, b. 1725.

Before referring to specific Clans in this Branch, we can relate two events that deal with more than one Clan in the Branch.

**Event One.** This involved two day trips to Franklin Co., NC where Richard U., II settled about 1755. On Saturday, 9 MAY 2009, Cousin Miley Albert Perry "Monk" and I drove down for a casual ride around the area. On Monday 11 MAY 2009 we returned to be in the company of Mr. Simon Rogers who served as our guide. For the first time we visited the Sutton Area about 2-3 miles NE of Pearces. At Sutton one finds Popular Springs Baptist Church formed in 1788. It is the Mother Church in the area. We also visited the Pine Ridge Area just east of Sutton where one finds Pine Ridge Baptist Church formed in 1924 as an offshoot of the Church at Popular Springs. We know that some members of the Moccasin Creek Branch of the Upchurch Family were connected to the Sutton Area in the 1750-1850 era, but a coherent story is yet to be developed. At present we have only snippets of information.

Just north of Sutton lies Crooked Creek which we inspected at two points. This creek is referenced in connection with Upchurch Family members prior to 1800 and we must now proceed to fix the relative locations of the creek and specific Upchurch references.

Moving on to Louisburg, the County Seat of Franklin Co., NC, we visited with Alice Faye (Parrish) Hunter, the Clerk of Superior Court. She is one of three Parrish sisters whose heritage goes back to the Centerville-Gupton Area in NE Franklin Co., NC. Sister Nancy (Parrish) Long of Sacramento, CA often sends your editor useful emails. We later went to the Centerville Area. For details see the report herein later for the James U., V Clan.

While in Louisburg we paid a courtesy visit to Joe Pearce who chaired the committee that produced the recently released Franklin County Heritage Book. He indicates that work is starting on a second volume of the Book and that a Franklin Co., NC. Genealogy Society is being formed.

At Pearces we visited briefly with Cousin Betty Rose (Upchurch) Privette of the Richard U., III/Burkely U. Subclan. She had to leave to visit her granddaughter who had just been hospitalized because of an auto accident. She was not seriously injured.

While in Pearces we took note of the fact that the country store across the road from the church had burned to the ground within the last few days.

Our trip on Monday was concluded as we took our leave of Simon at his farm on Rogers Road after sampling a very special brand of peach brandy which Simon provided.

Several attempts were made to contact cooperator Rosa Mae (Baker) Perry of Wendell, NC but without success. We later learned she was away from home.

**Event Two.** This can be referred to as the Apex Talk which your editor gave on 12 MAY 2009 in Apex, Wake County, NC. Here is how it came about. Readers of the UB may recall that The Apex Historical Society has for years sponsored a tour of historic homes and buildings in the Apex area. Quite a few of these have an Upchurch connection. Along the way we have come to know and develop a friendship with Mrs. Deborah Douglass. She is a key member of the Society and lives in the restored home of Malpheus Gilbert Upchurch "Mac". In March 2009 I contacted Debbie and offered to give a talk on Upchurch and related families of the border of Wake and Chatham Counties. She explored this with her colleagues and it was agreed that I would give such a talk on 12 MAY 2009 under the sponsorship of The Apex Historical Society and The Halle Cultural Center, the latter being a relatively new facility in Apex. The formal title adopted was "Upchurch and Related Families of Western Wake County: 200 Years and Counting".

A total of 68 individuals attended the talk. This was due to an excellent promotional effort mounted by Debbie and her Associates. They were successful in getting the top half of the 7 MAY 2009 issue of The Apex Herald newspaper to promote the talk. This in itself was a coup for the Upchurch Family. The article was entitled "Lecture Series Kicks Off" and was subtitled "Upchurch Expert to Speak at Apex Historical Society Program". The article included two spectacular Upchurch photos supplied by Debbie. One of them is reproduced below. This is the "Mac" Upchurch house.





During the talk repeated references were made to the marriages of the children and grandchildren of Nathan Upchurch, I and Moses Upchurch into local families. A list of these marriages was made available to the attendees and it is reproduced here for the record.

#### Family History - Western Wake Co., NC

Nathan Upchurch I and his brother Moses Upchurch married and started their families in Franklin Co., NC. About 1802 both moved to the area near present day Apex, NC. Nathan settled in Green Level and Moses nearby just across the county line in Chatham County. Before the Civil War, the children and grandchildren of Nathan and Moses had intermarried with over 50 local families as follows:

#### I. Nathan Upchurch (1759-1835).

A. Gilbert Upchurch md. 1<sup>st</sup> Elizabeth UPCHURCH; md. 2<sup>nd</sup> Lucretia MILLS.

(Great-grandfather of Robert Philip Upchurch).

B. Hubbard Upchurch md. Esther BYRD.

1. Green Berry Upchurch, CSA, md. 1<sup>st</sup> Ann Mariah BROWN; md. 2<sup>nd</sup> Sarah WILLIS.

2. Parker Upchurch\* md. Harriett Hawkins BROADWELL.

3. Armelia Upchurch md. Hinton HUDSON.

4. Martha Tabitha Upchurch md. Willie W. HOLLEMAN.

5. Lindermond Upchurch\* md. Adeline FRANKLIN.

C. Acril L. Upchurch md. Mary OLIVE.

D. Nathan Upchurch II (d. 1829) md. Telitha PATRICK.

1. Mackey Louisa Upchurch md. Kenton L. JONES.

2. William D. Upchurch md. Emily BELVIN.

3. Alvin N. Upchurch md. Mary Ann OVERBY.

4. Nathan Upchurch III md. Martha A. POPE.

E. Mackey Upchurch md. Edmund COLE.

F. Tabitha Upchurch md. ?

1. Golden Almon Upchurch, Sr./ md Nancy Ann LEWTER.

2. Martha Jane Upchurch md. Merrell OLIVE.

G. Aquilla Upchurch md. Nathaniel MITCHELL.

H. Burtis Upchurch md. Margaret YATES.

1. Abel Upchurch md. Nancy SORRELL.

2. Bartlett Upchurch md. Rebecca Jane WHITAKER.

3. Gilbert Burtis Upchurch md. Margaret BYRD.

4. John Rice Upchurch I md. Adelia M. CROWDER.

5. Jubal Upchurch II md. Dicey MAYNARD.

#### II. Moses Upchurch (1753-1853).

A. Murray Upchurch md. Nancy Baucom SCOTT.

1. Martha Upchurch md. Simeon YATES.

2. Elizabeth Upchurch md. Haywood LAWRENCE "Pat".

3. Isham Sims Upchurch, CSA, md. Adelia BEAVERS.

4. Emily Catherine Upchurch md. Addison COUNCIL "Dock".

5. Paschal B. Upchurch\* md. Talitha H. OLIVE.

6. Rachel Rebecca Upchurch md. 1<sup>st</sup> Stephen SCROBLE; MD 2<sup>ND</sup> James PENNY.



7. Mary Ann Upchurch md. Phillip Nelson FOUSHEE.
8. Clara Upchurch md. Vernon RIGSBEE.
- B. Courtney Upchurch md. Cynthia RICHARDSON.
- C. Whitney Upchurch md. Elizabeth GOODWIN.
  1. Candis Upchurch md. John Thomas MANN.
  2. Duncan Lemuel Upchurch md. Elizabeth Ellen EDWARDS.
  3. Hesper Ann Upchurch md. Alfred DAUGHTRY.
  4. James M. Upchurch md. Katie L. KEITH.
  5. Martha Jane Upchurch md. William STEPHENS.
  6. Bennett A.. Upchurch, CSA, md. Sarah LAWRENCE.
- D. Gillium Upchurch md. Sarah SMITH.
  1. Hanson Upchurch md. Nancy WATSON.
  2. Sidney Upchurch md. Deliah G. WILLIAMS.
- E. Letha Upchurch md. Hezekiah MASSEY.
- F. Parthenia Upchurch md. John SMITH.
- G. Mary Upchurch md. Adam BUNN.
- H. Ruffin Upchurch md. 1<sup>st</sup> Elizabeth KELLY; md. 2<sup>nd</sup> Martha GOODWIN.
  1. Rufus Upchurch md. 1<sup>st</sup> Emily HUDSON; md. 2<sup>nd</sup> Ann M. LUTER.
  2. Mariah Upchurch md. Robert ROLLINS.
  3. Abby Upchurch md. John JENKINS.
  4. Margaret Upchurch md. William C. SCOTT.
  5. Elizabeth Upchurch md. William LAWRENCE.
  6. Thomas Upchurch\* md. Lydia Ann OLIVE.
  7. Catherine Upchurch md. Alfred LAWRENCE.
  8. Augusta Ann Upchurch md. Calvin GOODWIN.
  9. John R. Upchurch md. Martha Emaline COTTON.
  10. James Wesley Upchurch md. Sarah Ann GOODWIN.
  11. Orlando Jackson Upchurch md. Sarah Ann RAGIN.
  12. Eliza Jane Upchurch md. T. Hillard GOODWIN.
  13. Benjamin Franklin Upchurch md. Mary Jane GOODWIN.
  14. Kelly Franklin Upchurch md. Sarah Jane EASON.
- I. Sims Upchurch md. 1<sup>st</sup> Abigail OLIVE; md. 2<sup>nd</sup> Tabitha WILLIAMS; md. 3<sup>rd</sup> Matilda TEMPLES.
  1. Parthenia Upchurch md. Lucian B. YATES.
  2. Quinetta Upchurch (Twin) md. Joseph Bell LASATER.
  3. Lucetta Upchurch (Twin) md. 1<sup>st</sup> Matthew Henderson COUNCIL; md. 2<sup>nd</sup> C. Sam WILLIAMS.
  4. Lewraney Upchurch md. Albert Carberry COUNCIL.
  5. James Henderson Upchurch\* md. Delia WILLIAMS.
  6. Williford Upchurch\*
  7. Winslow Upchurch\*
  8. Winship Upchurch\*
  9. Courtney Upchurch, CSA, md. Eliza LEWIS.
  10. Alvania Upchurch md. B. T. HARGROVE.

CSA = Confederate States of America

\* Died in Service Civil War.

During the talk reference was made to a number of written documents pertaining to the history of the area. A list of these was made available to the attendees and is reproduced below. The audience was encouraged to come forward with additions to this list. A proposal was also made that a quiet corner should be found in the Apex area where a collection of such documents could reside for the enjoyment of those interested in the families and history of the area. Debbie and I have formed a pact to explore this proposal.

#Books relating to Family History in Western Wake County, NC

Per Phil Upchurch 1 May 2009

1. Carpenter, N.C. As I Remember -- and What I Have Learned by Bryan Edwards 2006
2. A Study of the Barbee Families of Chatham, Orange and Wake Counties in North Carolina by Ruth Herndon Shields, Belle Lewter West and Kathryn Crossly Stone - 1971
3. Luter-Lewter Family of England, Virginia, North Carolina, and States South and West by Belle Lewter West - 1974
4. Upchurch Family of England, Virginia and North Carolina by Belle Lewter West - 1972
5. The Naaman Mills Family of North Carolina 1757-1996 by William A. Mills - 1996
6. A Supplement to A Study of the Barbee Families of Chatham, Orange, and Wake Counties in N.C. by Kathryn Crossley Stone - 1976
7. The Baucom Families in the United States by Banks McLaurin, Jr. with co-editor Charles Van Baucom and Louanna M. Baucom - 1978
8. The Cleggs of Old Chatham by W. Harold Broughton - 1977
9. The Councils - From Virginia to North Carolina 2nd Ed. by Irma Ragan Holland - 1978
10. Concerning Our Ancestors - The Johnsons and Their Kin by Ruth Bethea Johnson - 1980
11. James Olive Family - Wake County, N.C. by Olive Family Association - 1965
12. The Pages - From VA to NC - The Lewis Page Line by Irma Ragan Holland - 1981

13. The Ragans - From VA to NC by Irma Ragan Holland – pub. Prior to 1977
14. The Tysons of Old Chatham by W. Harold Broughton - 1972
15. Descendants of William Utley and Elizabeth Turner of Wake Co., NC Who Married About 1738 by Joan Brink, compiler, and R.F. Wicker, Jr. Editor. - 1992

**The Apex talk refreshed old friendships and provided an opportunity to create new linkages to explore mutual interests in local and family history. The talk appeared to strike a chord with many who attended.**

**For those who are interested a DVD of the talk can be obtained for \$10.00 postpaid by contacting:**

**Deborah Douglass  
211 S. Mason Sstreet  
Apex, NC 27502  
<dmdoug2000@yahoo.com>  
Phone: (919)362-0213  
Make check payable to: Apex Historical Society**

<http://www.apexhistoricalsociety.com/>

UB VOL 31, NO 1, P 27

JAN – DEC 2010

# **1. Clan 1. Moses Upchurch Clan**

**1**

**197 members added in UB, Vol. 31.**

**The Moses U/Courtney U. Subclan includes a line headed by Moses U., 1822 - aft. 1880. His descendant Sharon (Rone) Self of MS has been a stalwart collaborator for this subclan and line. She has played a lead role in obtaining a CSA marker for her ancestor Moses U. In an email dated 19 OCT 2010 she provides the following information:**

**On Sunday, the 7<sup>th</sup> of November at 2:00 P.M. there will be a Civil War Headstone and Honor Ceremony for Moses Upchurch, born 1822 and buried in the Colcolough Cemetery on the corner of Highway 25 South and Dorman Lake Road in Oktibbeha County. The ceremony will be conducted by the local Civil War re-enactment group, the 1<sup>st</sup> Mississippi Light Artillery, Company C (Turner's Battery.) At the same time, a Colcolough Cemetery sign will be erected. All interested parties are invited to attend as well as the descendants of Moses and Emily Upchurch. For additional info, please contact Mary Ann Livingston at 662-324-5084 or Sharon Rone Self via e-mail at S\_Rone@msn.com.**

## 1. Clan I. Moses Upchurch Clan.

1

28 members added in UB, Vol. 32.

Over the last several years we have found evidence that supports the idea that Nancy A. U., b. about 1817 (Wake Co., NC), d. 18 AUG 1888 (Wake Co., NC) is in fact the Head of a Line in the Moses U./Whitney U. Subclan. She married in Wake Co., NC in 1845 William James Hobbie, and their descendants are now well documented in our files. For this breakthrough we are deeply indebted to Mrs. Joseph B. Simpson (nee: Billie Rita Adams). 55845

On 27 AUG 2011 it was a great pleasure to have Drs. Charles and Virginia Peterson as guests in our home. Both are now retired from their Professorships in The University of Missouri at Columbia, MO. Charles is the GGS of Lucinda U. who is the GGD of Courtney U., Head of the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. Charles has for many years helped us with Upchurch records and deserves thanks from The entire extended Upchurch family. Discussions during this several hour visit were far-ranging and most enjoyable. Before their departure for Columbia we broke bread together at a local restaurant.

The Moses U. Line in the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan has been well served by Cousin Sharon K. Self (nee: Sharon Kay Rone) of Senatobia, MS over the last several years. We were finally able to greet each other in person on 28 OCT 2011 while she and her husband were in St. Louis, MO on business. In a short two hour visit we shared how we each came to have such a passion for family history. We hope to have other visits. In the meantime Sharon has agreed to serve on the Upchurch Electronic Advisory Committee.



UB VOL 33, NO 1, P 15, 16

JAN – DEC 2012

Clan I . Moses U. Clan

1

67 members added in UB, Vol. 33

Rev. James Tony U. of Texas comes to light once again. We know him as the s/o James Courtney U. who heads a Line in the Moses U./Courtney U. Subclan. Over several years the story of how he as a fundamentalist minister in the 1890 - 1910 era helped females in distress and fought prostitution. In early 2011 when Sherri Knight contacted your editor searching for information on Rev. Upchurch she indicated she was writing a book on prostitution. She was supplied copies of details with the result being that Rev. Upchurch got his own chapter in the book. The book is entitled "The Oldest Profession in Texas - Waco's Red Light District" By James Plyant and Sherri Knight. Jacobs Books 2011. A copy of the book has been obtained for the Upchurch Collection and detailed notes regarding this exercise has been entered in the Biofile of Rev. J. T. U. Like most American Upchurch families we have to work hard to have our story told. In this case, timely input elevated our part in the book from a few pages to a full chapter.

39378

**FIGURES 13 AND 14 THE UPCHURCH BROTHERS ENCLAVE**

These two versions of the same map are of recent vintage created to reveal new information about the Upchurch Brothers Enclave on the border of Wake and Chatham Counties in NC. They should also be of use on an ongoing basis as we continue to study how the Upchurch preserve in the area has unfolded since 1803.

Figure 13 shows the basic road map stripped of details. The Brothers Enclave ran from Green Level on the east, where Nathan U. I had his land to Highway 751 on the west and from Lewter Shop Road on the north to Green Level Road West on the south - in rough terms. In earlier presentations, we have documented the precise location of the lands of Nathan U. I. We know that the 555 acres purchased by Moses U. in 1803 touched the Wake/Chathan line and lay on Pitts Creek in Chathan County. With the help of Cousin Billy Sears, we have now established that Pitts Creek and Rocky Ford Branch are one and the same. Figure 14 portrays the amount of space the 555 acres would have taken up and the rough location, but we are yet to obtain the metes and bounds measurements and so the shape of the tract, for the present, eludes us. Still, this is a nice breakthrough for the Moses U. Clan.



